

THE TWO WITNESSES

VOLUME TWO

BIBLE PATTERNS OF THE PAST, PRESENT, AND FUTURE



(ILLUSTRATION: ZECHARIAH 4:2-3)

YH Ministry

Copyright: none.

Copying is permitted as long as the text is not altered and if any reproduction is done at the Lord's direction, for His purposes, and for the edification of the Body of Christ. Selling copies is at the risk of the seller! If it is done at the direction of the Lord Jesus Christ, for purposes of His kingdom, at a reasonable price, He may bless it. If it is done for personal monetary gain (filthy lucre) He will not bless it! Beware!

Completed: 2011

YH Ministry

yhministry888@yahoo.com

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

*For the Lord Jesus
and
for my family,
both by relation and by the Holy Spirit.*

TABLE OF CONTENTS

<u>CHAPTER</u>	<u>TITLE</u>	<u>PAGE</u>
	Introduction.....	iii
1	Body of Christ.....	1
2	Luke 1 & Matthew 2.....	7
3	Revelation 12 / Daniel 12 & Luke 4.....	13
4	The 144,000.....	17
5	Let My People Go.....	44
6	Rich Man Poor Man.....	59
7	The Two Temptations.....	64
8	Isaiah 61 - Luke 4 - Matthew 5.....	66
9	1 Samuel & John 6.....	68
10	Baptism & Burial.....	91
11	Exodus 14 - Matthew 8 - Jonah.....	95
12	Jonah & Jesus.....	101
13	Hell.....	106
14	Revival.....	109
15	Exodus & The Feasts.....	115
16	Discipleship.....	118
17	The Lord's Prayer & The Doctrine of Christ.....	121
18	Micah 5 & Jeremiah 5	127
19	Revelation 5 & Revelation 10.....	131
20	Exodus 19-20 & Revelation 4-5.....	134
21	Exodus - Revelation Plagues & Jesus.....	140
22	Candlestick & Two Trees.....	154
23	The Living Temple.....	163
24	Crucifixion & The 6 Seals of Revelation 6.....	169
25	The 6 Seals & Revelation 19-20.....	175
26	Descent from the Mount.....	182
27	Angels & Archangels.....	191
28	Seraphim & Cherubim.....	214
29	Ezekiel 10 & John 10.....	221
30	Four Door.....	225
31	The Resurrections.....	248

TABLE OF CONTENTS

<u>APPENDIX</u>	<u>TITLE</u>	<u>PAGE</u>
A	Hebrew Letter “ה” (HE).....	259
B	Bible Archaeology.....	260
C	Additional Topics for Study.....	261
D	Book of Daniel Chronological Order.....	262
E	Book of Revelation Chronological Order.....	264
F	Infinity Bible Code Alphabets.....	268
G	Triumphal Entry.....	272
H	Matthew Mark Luke John.....	285
I	Crucifixion & Resurrection Chronology.....	350

INTRODUCTION

This book continues the study of scriptural patterns in the Bible as presented in the original volume of The Two Witnesses.

The principle of the testimony of two witnesses is a pattern found throughout the Bible and, in many cases, it is three or more witnesses.

“...In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established.”

2 Corinthians 13:1

This second volume of The Two Witnesses is composed of several sections of material. Chapters 1-5 are the first section with subject matter concerning various aspects of the seed of promise or the man child. Chapters 6-26 cover various topics in the Bible. Chapters 27-31 concern types of heavenly beings, their roles, and comparisons with the attributes of Jesus. Finally, there are appendices with different types of material for the reader's reference.

This book contains the revealed Word of God and is a gift:

“The secret *things belong* unto the LORD our God: but those *things which are revealed belong* unto us and to our children for ever, that we may do all the words of this law.”

Deuteronomy 29:29

As before in the first volume, this book presents the information in two parts: the Bible pattern and the interpretation of the pattern. The following verse highlights the existence of patterns:

“The thing that hath been, it *is that* which shall be; and that which is done *is that* which shall be done: and *there is* no new *thing* under the sun.”

Ecclesiastes 1:9

Finally, the reader is strongly exhorted to have their heart right with the Lord before looking into this book, as stated previously in the original volume of The Two Witnesses:

“And he smote the men of Bethshemesh, because they had looked into the ark of the LORD, even he smote of the people fifty thousand and threescore and ten men: and the people lamented, because the LORD had smitten *many* of the people with a great slaughter. And the men of Bethshemesh said, Who is able to stand before this holy LORD God? and to whom shall he go up from us?”

1 Samuel 6:19-20

YH Ministry

CHAPTER 1

BODY OF CHRIST

This Bible pattern consists of a four-column comparison. The left column is Old Testament Joseph, the middle two columns are about Jesus, and the right column is about the Body of Christ. There are some very awesome insights contained in these scriptures. Even though the pattern provides deeper revelation, there are still certain things that are not well understood because of the limitations of the logical, carnal mind. Without a corresponding experience to provide a frame of reference, the carnal mind does not comprehend the deeper things of the Holy Spirit. Let us now review the depth of this Bible pattern.

We are all familiar with the story of Joseph's coat of many colors; but we have never really understood its spiritual significance, other than it was a gift of love from his father. Because of the pattern, we can see that the coat of many colors symbolizes the 40 generations of Jesus Christ, from Abraham to Jesus. God the Father gave this gift of love to His son Jesus. The concept of this is staggering, when trying to understand the depth of it. Each reader is highly recommended to go before the Lord and to thank Him for His generosity. It is a gift of such generosity that we cannot understand at this time the total significance of it without more revelation from the Lord.

The pattern match-up between the columns is astounding and greatly encourages believers in Jesus because it provides a peek at the future gift of love that awaits His Body of Christ. The "manifestation of the sons of God" (Romans 8:19) is an event in the near future of tremendous impact and yet, it is largely unstudied and unreported, even by Christian authors. The following verse concerns this event:

"Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is. And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure." 1 John 3:2-3

There are two types of fulfillment: type 1 and type 2. The type 1 fulfillment takes place when a person gets saved or born again. They pass from death unto life. Their "old man" dies and the "new man" comes forth to serve the Lord. They become the sons (and daughters) of God:

"Therefore if any man *be* in Christ, *he is* a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new." 2 Corinthians 5:17

The type 2 fulfillment occurs at the Second Coming of Jesus:

"For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: Then we which are alive *and* remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord." 1 Thess. 4:16-17

This is known as the rapture or the "catching away". For those who are deceased and buried, at the catching away their body is resurrected from the grave, joins with their spirit and soul which has been in heaven all this time, and then becomes one with the Lord. Those who are alive and remain will fly straight up into the clouds to be one with the Lord. The pattern has already been established by the resurrection of Jesus from the grave.

"...I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ." 1 Thess. 5:23b

If we Christians think that we are going to be raptured without the children of Israel, we better think again.

"Brethren, my heart's desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved." Romans 10:1

CHAPTER 1

BODY OF CHRIST

“Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in. Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not highminded, but fear: For if God spared not the natural branches, *take heed* lest he also spare not thee. Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in *his* goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.” Romans 11:19-22

“For this *is* the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people: And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest. For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.” Hebrews 8:10-12

“Now if the fall of them *be* the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles; how much more their fulness? For I speak to you Gentiles, inasmuch as I am the apostle of the Gentiles, I magnify mine office: If by any means I may provoke to emulation *them which are* my flesh, and might save some of them. For if the casting away of them *be* the reconciling of the world, what *shall* the receiving of *them be*, but life from the dead?” Romans 11:12-15

In the near future, Jesus is going to be revealing himself to the remnant of Israel and He is going to use a number of Christians for this purpose. Better get ready Christian; to be called upon when Jesus comes knocking on your door. Woe unto that Christian who says NO, who chooses convenience instead of sacrifice in that day! Woe unto that Christian who tries to save his life and instead will lose it! He shall experience weeping and gnashing of teeth, for eternity! But blessed is he who receives the children of Israel in their time of need. Faithful is that servant who is watchful and waiting when the Lord comes at an unexpected hour.

“Whosoever shall receive this child in my name receiveth me...” Luke 9:48a

Hey Christian! When the children of Israel arrive at your doorstep needing refuge or provision, make yourself available. In so doing, you are serving the Lord himself. Study the pattern on the next four pages and see how Joseph made himself available to his brethren and how he was blessed afterwards. Also, observe how the pattern shall repeat in the last days. The time is almost upon us. Are you ready?

“Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: For I was an hungered, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in: Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me. Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, and fed *thee*? or thirsty, and gave *thee* drink? When saw we thee a stranger, and took *thee* in? or naked, and clothed *thee*? Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee? And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done *it* unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done *it* unto me.” Matthew 25:34-40

THE BODY OF CHRIST

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 37:

³Now Israel loved Joseph more than all his children, because he was the son of his old age: and he made him a coat of many colours.

(*The Church engaged to Jesus*→)
(*The Rapture*→)

(*Man child in the likeness of sinful flesh*→)

⁴And when his brethren saw that their father loved him more than all his brethren, they hated him, and could not speak peaceably unto him.

⁵And Joseph dreamed a dream, and he told *it* his brethren: and they hated him yet the more.

⁶And he said unto them, Hear, I pray you, this dream which I have dreamed:

⁷For, behold, we *were* binding sheaves in the field, and, lo, my sheaf arose, and also stood upright; and, behold, your sheaves stood round about, and made obeisance to my sheaf.

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 1:

¹The book of ...the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.

(*v.1:2-1:17 = 42 Generations*)

¹⁸Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with ...child of the Holy Ghost.

¹⁹Then Joseph her husband, being a just *man*, and not willing to make her a public example, ...was minded to put her away privily.

²⁰But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for

...that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost.

3RD WITNESS

JOHN 1:

¹In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

²The same was in the beginning with God.

³All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.

⁴In him was life; and the life was the light of men.

⁵And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not.

⁶There was a man sent from God, whose name was John.

4TH WITNESS

ROMANS 8:

¹*There is* therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

²For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death.

³For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh:

⁴That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

⁵For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit.

⁶For to be carnally minded *is* death; but to be spiritually minded *is* life and peace.

⁷Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.

⁸So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God.

⁹But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

THE BODY OF CHRIST

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 37:

⁸And his brethren said to him, Shalt thou indeed reign over us? or shalt thou indeed have dominion over us? And they hated him yet the more for his dreams, and for his words.

⁹And he dreamed yet another dream, and told it his brethren, and said, Behold, I have dreamed a dream more; and, behold, the sun and the moon and the eleven stars made obeisance to me.

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 1:

²¹And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.

3RD WITNESS

JOHN 1:

⁷The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that ... all men through him might believe.
(*belief = faith = righteousness*)

⁸He was not that Light, but *was sent* to bear witness of that Light.

⁹*That was the true* Light,

... which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.

¹⁰He was in the world,

... and the world was made by him,

... and the world knew him not.

4TH WITNESS

ROMANS 8:

¹⁰And if Christ *be* in you, the body *is* dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness.

¹¹But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.

¹²Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, ... to live after the flesh.

¹³For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

¹⁴For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.

¹⁵For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

¹⁶The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God:

THE BODY OF CHRIST

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 37:

¹⁰And he told *it* to his father, and to his brethren: and his father rebuked him, and said unto him,

What *is* this dream that thou hast dreamed? Shall I and thy mother and thy brethren indeed come to bow down ourselves to thee to the earth?

¹¹And his brethren envied him; but his father observed the saying.
(*the dream = a prophecy*)

²⁸Then there passed by Midianites merchantmen; and they drew and lifted up Joseph out of the pit, and sold Joseph to the Ishmeelites for twenty pieces of silver: and they brought Joseph into Egypt.

GENESIS 39:

²And the LORD was with Joseph, and he was a prosperous man; and he was in the house of his master the Egyptian.

GENESIS 45:

¹Then Joseph could not refrain himself before all them that stood by him; and he cried, Cause every man to go out from me. And there stood no man with him, while Joseph made himself known unto his brethren.

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 1:

²²Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying,

²³Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us.

²⁴Then Joseph being raised from sleep

...did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him,

...and took unto him his wife:

3RD WITNESS

JOHN 1:

¹¹He came unto his own, and his own received him not.

¹²But as many as received him, to them gave he

...power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:

¹³Which were born,

...not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man,

...but of God.

4TH WITNESS

ROMANS 8:

¹⁷And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

¹⁸For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time *are* not worthy *to be compared* with the glory which shall be revealed in us.

¹⁹For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the

...manifestation of the sons of God.

²⁰For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected *the same* in hope,

²¹Because the creature itself also shall be delivered

...from the bondage of corruption

...into the glorious liberty of the children of God.

²²For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now.

²³And not only *they*, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, *to wit*,
...the redemption of our body.

THE BODY OF CHRIST

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

4TH WITNESS

GENESIS 45:

⁵Now therefore be not grieved, nor angry with yourselves, that ye sold me hither: for God did send me before you to preserve life.

⁹Haste ye, and go up to my father, and say unto him, Thus saith thy son Joseph, God hath made me lord of all Egypt: come down unto me, tarry not:

(Egypt = storehouse of food)

¹³And ye shall tell my father of all my glory in Egypt, and of all that ye have seen; and ye shall haste and bring down my father hither.

MATTHEW 1:

²⁵And knew her not till she had brought forth her firstborn son: and he called his name JESUS.

(Jesus born in Bethlehem)

(Bethlehem = house of bread)

JOHN 1:

¹⁴And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us,

(the Word = Jesus)

(Jesus = the bread of life)

...(and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.

ROMANS 8:

²⁴For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for?

²⁵But if we hope for that we see not, *then* do we with patience wait for *it*.

²⁶Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered.

²⁷And he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what *is* the mind of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the saints according to *the will of God*.

²⁸And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are called according to *his* purpose.

²⁹For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate *to be* conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren.

³⁰Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

CHAPTER 2

LUKE 1 & MATTHEW 2

The pattern illustrates a match-up between the two subject chapters, concerning the time period of the births of John the Baptist and of Jesus. The main points are:

- Herod is a type of antichrist.
- The visitation of the Lord and/or His representative(s) results in one of two reactions: troubling fear or rejoicing.
- The visitation of the Lord offers great promises and expectations for God's people but represents a major threat to the devil's kingdom.
- The result is that the devil mobilizes his forces to seek out and destroy the seed of promise, causing God's people to flee.
- The Lord delivers His anointed from the enemy and the devil's representative is defeated.
- God's people return back to their land.
- The Lord's anointed carry out their mission and fulfill God's Word.

One specific point to notice is that John the Baptist grew up in the desert until the Lord revealed him at his appointed time. Many of God's anointed originate from the desert. The wilderness of the Bible is a type of desert. Christians go through wilderness / desert experiences for spiritual preparation prior to the fullness of their calling. The flesh and the lusts thereof typically perish in the wilderness. The result is a focus on God's vision for what needs to be accomplished. Each of us needs to maximize the benefits from our own wilderness experience and not to look upon it as a negative time in our life.

From the pattern, we see a parallel between Herod and the devil:

Herod (#1)

Attempts to slay all the young children, two years old and younger, at the time when Jesus and John the Baptist were infant children.

The Devil (round 1)

Tempts Jesus in the wilderness, in order to bring about the downfall of Jesus at the infancy of His ministry.

Herod (#2)

Beheads John the Baptist.

The Devil (round 2)

Has Jesus crucified.

The object lesson is that the devil knows who the Lord's anointed are and will try to prevent the start of their ministry. Christians should not be surprised at the resistance they encounter at the start of their walk with the Lord. It means that they are on the right path. Also, the devil cannot end a Christian's life unless the Lord allows it. If He allows it then it will be for a greater purpose and the Christian receives a greater reward in heaven.

“Blessed are ye, when *men* shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.” Matthew 5:11-12

Compare this chapter with Chapter 4, The 144,000, and study how it fits into the big picture of the last days.

LUKE 1 & MATTHEW 2

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 1:

⁵There was in the days of Herod, the king of Judaea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abia: and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabeth.

⁶And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless.

⁷And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren, and they both were *now* well stricken in years.

⁸And it came to pass, that while he executed the priest's office before God in the order of his course,

⁹According to the custom of the priest's office, his lot was to burn incense when he went into the temple of the Lord.

¹⁰And the whole multitude of the people were praying without at the time of incense.

¹¹And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord standing on the right side of the altar of incense.

¹²And when Zacharias saw *him*, he was troubled, and fear fell upon him.

¹³But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John.

¹⁴And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and many shall rejoice at his birth.

¹⁵For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb.

¹⁶And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God.

¹⁷And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 2:

¹Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king,

...behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem,

²Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.

³When Herod the king had heard *these things*, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him.

⁴And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born.

⁵And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judaea: for thus it is written by the prophet, (*Micah 5:2*)

⁶And thou Bethlehem, *in* the land of Juda, art not the least among the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule my people Israel.

⁷Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise men, inquired of them diligently what time the star appeared.

⁸And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the young child; and when ye have found *him*, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also.

⁹When they had heard the king, they departed; and, lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was.

¹⁰When they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy.

LUKE 1 & MATTHEW 2

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

¹⁸And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years.

¹⁹And the angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God; and am sent to speak unto thee, and to show thee these glad tidings.

²⁰And, behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed, because thou believest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.

²¹And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple.

²²And when he came out, he could not speak unto them: and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple: for he beckoned unto them, and remained speechless.

²³And it came to pass, that, as soon as the days of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his own house.

²⁴And after those days his wife Elisabeth conceived, and hid herself five months, saying,

²⁵Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the days wherein he looked on *me*, to take away my reproach among men.

²⁶And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth,

²⁷To a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name was Mary.

²⁸And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail, *thou that art* highly favoured, the Lord *is* with thee: blessed *art* thou among women.

²⁹And when she saw *him*, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this should be.

³⁰And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found favour with God.

³¹And, behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name JESUS.

³²He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David:

³³And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end.

MATTHEW 2:

¹¹And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with ...Mary his mother,

...and fell down, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts; gold, and frankincense, and myrrh.

LUKE 1 & MATTHEW 2

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 1:

³⁴Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?

³⁵And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God.

³⁶And, behold, thy cousin Elisabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age: and this is the sixth month with her, who was called barren.

³⁷For with God nothing shall be impossible.

³⁸And Mary said, Behold the handmaid of the Lord; be it unto me according to thy word. And the angel departed from her.

³⁹And Mary arose in those days, and went into the hill country with haste, into a city of Juda;

⁴⁰And entered into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabeth.

⁴¹And it came to pass, that, when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb; and Elisabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost:

⁴²And she spake out with a loud voice, and said, Blessed *art* thou among women, and blessed *is the fruit of thy womb*.

⁴³And whence *is* this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come to me?

⁴⁴For, lo, as soon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy.

⁴⁵And blessed *is* she that believed: for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her from the Lord.

⁴⁶And Mary said, My soul doth magnify the Lord,

⁴⁷And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.

⁴⁸For he hath regarded the low estate of his handmaiden: for, behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed.

⁴⁹For he that is mighty hath done to me great things; and holy *is* his name.

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 2:

¹²And being warned of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

¹³And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, ...saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word:

...for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him.

¹⁴When he arose, he took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt:

¹⁵And was there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, Out of Egypt have I called my son.

LUKE 1 & MATTHEW 2

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 1:

⁵⁰And his mercy *is* on them that fear him from generation to generation.

⁵¹He hath showed strength with his arm; he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts.

⁵²He hath put down the mighty from *their* seats, and exalted them of low degree.

⁵³He hath filled the hungry with good things; and the rich he hath sent empty away.

⁵⁴He hath holpen his servant Israel, in remembrance of *his* mercy;

⁵⁵As he spake to our fathers, to Abraham, and to his seed for ever.

⁵⁶And Mary abode with her about three months, and returned to her own house.

⁵⁷Now Elisabeth's full time came that she should be delivered; and she brought forth a son.

⁵⁸And her neighbours and her cousins heard how the Lord had showed great mercy upon her; and they rejoiced with her.

⁵⁹And it came to pass, that on the eighth day they came to circumcise the child; and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.

⁶⁰And his mother answered and said, Not so; but he shall be called John.

⁶¹And they said unto her, There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name.

⁶²And they made signs to his father, how he would have him called.

⁶³And he asked for a writing table, and wrote, saying, His name is John. And they marvelled all.

⁶⁴And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue *loosed*, and he spake, and praised God.

⁶⁵And fear came on all that dwelt round about them: and all these sayings were noised abroad throughout all the hill country of Judaea.

⁶⁶And all they that heard *them* laid *them* up in their hearts, saying, What manner of child shall this be! And the hand of the Lord was with him.

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 2:

¹⁶Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently inquired of the wise men.

¹⁷Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying,

¹⁸In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping *for* her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.

¹⁹But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt,

²⁰Saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel:

...for they are dead which sought the young child's life.

²¹And he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

²²But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judaea in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee:

LUKE 1 & MATTHEW 2

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

⁶⁷And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying,

⁶⁸Blessed *be* the Lord God of Israel; for he hath visited and redeemed his people,

⁶⁹And hath raised up an horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David;

⁷⁰As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, which have been since the world began:

⁷¹That we should be saved from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us;

⁷²To perform the mercy *promised* to our fathers, and to remember his holy covenant;

⁷³The oath which he sware to our father Abraham,

⁷⁴That he would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hand of our enemies might serve him without fear,

⁷⁵In holiness and righteousness before him, all the days of our life.

⁷⁶And thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the Highest: for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to prepare his ways;

⁷⁷To give knowledge of salvation unto his people by the remission of their sins,

⁷⁸Through the tender mercy of our God; whereby the dayspring from on high hath visited us,

⁷⁹To give light to them that sit in darkness and *in* the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace.

⁸⁰And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his showing unto Israel.

MATTHEW 2:

²³And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets,

...He shall be called a Nazarene.

CHAPTER 3

REVELATION 12 / DANIEL 12 & LUKE 4

This chapter consists of a series of patterns that are not in chronological order; thus, for a chronology study the reader is encouraged to review Chapters 28, 29, 30, and 34 of Volume One of The Two Witnesses. After a review of these four chapters and after considering the pattern of this chapter, we can understand that the Israeli remnant that flees into the wilderness will be nourished with the Word of God. Chapter 46 of Volume One suggests that a certain remnant of born-again believers may be the ones distributing the “manna” to the Israeli remnant, similar to the disciples of Jesus distributing the loaves and fishes.

The notes column contains additional information concerning the interpretation of the pattern. The focus should remain on the scriptural pattern and less on the notes, in case the Lord provides additional revelation to the reader.

The story of this Bible pattern is as follows: in our desolation the Word of the Lord comes forth. Then the devil comes against us because we represent a threat. God then sends forth a deliver and separates the wicked from the just. Those who humble themselves and believe in the Word of the Lord receive blessing. Those who are too prideful to believe and will not walk by faith receive destruction.

Compare this chapter with Chapter 4, The 144,000, and study how it fits into the big picture of the last days.

REVELATION 12 / DANIEL 12 & LUKE 4

1 ST WITNESS	2 ND WITNESS	NOTES
<p>REVELATION 12: ⁶And the woman fled into the <u>wilderness</u>, where she hath a place prepared of God,</p> <p>...that they should <u>feed her</u> there a thousand two hundred <i>and</i> threescore days.</p> <p>⁷And there was <u>war in heaven</u>: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels,</p>	<p>LUKE 4: ¹And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the <u>wilderness</u>, ²Being forty days tempted of the devil. And in those days he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungered.</p> <p>³And the devil said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread. ⁴And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God. ⁵And the devil, taking him up into an high mountain, showed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. ⁶And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it.</p> <p>⁷If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine. ⁸And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. ⁹And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence: ¹⁰For it is written, He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee: ¹¹And in <i>their</i> hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. ¹²And Jesus answering said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. ¹³And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season.</p>	<p><i>In the last days, the woman (Israel) goes into the wilderness to escape from the devil. This compares with Jesus who goes into the wilderness and meets the devil.</i></p> <p><i>The pattern of verses 3-7 matches the pattern of the mark of the beast temptation in Revelation 13.</i></p> <p><i>Judgment upon the U.S.A.</i></p>

REVELATION 12 / DANIEL 12 & LUKE 4

1 ST WITNESS	2 ND WITNESS	NOTES
<p>DANIEL 12: ¹And at that time shall Michael stand up, <u>the great prince</u> which standeth for the children of thy people:</p>	<p>LUKE 4: ¹⁴And <u>Jesus</u> returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee: and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about. ¹⁵And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.</p>	<p><i>Parallel between Michael the archangel and Jesus the Son of God; HOWEVER, they are not one in the same. One is a creation; the other is the creator.</i></p>
<p>...and there shall be <u>a time of trouble</u>, such as never was since there was a nation <i>even</i> to that same time:</p>	<p>¹⁶And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into <u>the synagogue on the sabbath day</u>, and stood up for to read.</p>	<p><i>Religious people = trouble. (Pope's global army.)</i></p>
<p>...and at that time thy people shall be <u>delivered</u>,</p>	<p>¹⁷And there was <u>delivered</u> unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the <u>book</u>, he found the place where it was written, ¹⁸<i>The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach <u>deliverance</u> to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised,</i> ¹⁹<i>To preach the acceptable year of the Lord.</i></p>	<p><i>Deliverance comes to God's people, first there is deliverance from the devil, then there is deliverance from the beast.</i></p>
<p>...every one that shall be found written in the <u>book</u>.</p>	<p>²⁰And he closed the <u>book</u>, and he gave it again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him. ²¹And he began to say unto them,</p>	<p><i>The book of life is closed. Whoever is saved is saved, whoever is not is not. The parallel is the door closing on Noah's ark.</i></p>
<p>²And <u>many of them that sleep</u> in the dust of the earth <u>shall awake</u>, some to everlasting life, and some to shame <i>and</i> everlasting contempt.</p>	<p><i>...This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears.</i> <i>(Those who believed Jesus were saved and those who did not were lost.)</i></p>	<p><i>"For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first." 1 Thess. 4:16</i></p>

REVELATION 12 / DANIEL 12 & LUKE 4

1 ST WITNESS	2 ND WITNESS	NOTES
<p>DANIEL 12: ³And <u>they that be wise shall shine</u> as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever.</p>	<p>LUKE 4: ²²And all bare him witness, and wondered at the <u>gracious words</u> which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Joseph's son? ²³And he said unto them, Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, Physician, heal thyself: whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in thy country. ²⁴And he said, Verily I say unto you, No prophet is accepted in his own country.</p>	<p><i>"That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle..." Eph. 5:27</i></p>
<p>⁴But thou, O Daniel, <u>shut up the words</u>, and seal the book, even to the time of the end:</p> <p style="margin-left: 2em;"><i>(The woman of Sarepta was a gentile and Naaman the Syrian was a gentile. When Jesus said this it upset the religious Jews.)</i></p>	<p>²⁵But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elias, when the <u>heaven was shut up</u> three years and six months, when <u>great famine</u> was throughout all the land; ²⁶But unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta, a city of Sidon, unto a woman <u>that was a widow.</u> ²⁷And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Eliseus the prophet; and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian.</p>	<p><i>Those who practice the law* of religion are wretched, miserable, poor, blind, and naked, and don't know the truth (Jesus).</i></p> <p><i>"...God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble.." James 4:6</i></p>
<p>...<u>many</u></p> <p>...<u>shall run to and fro</u>,</p>	<p>²⁸And all they in the <u>synagogue</u>, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath, ²⁹And <u>rose up, and thrust him out</u> of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might cast him down headlong. ³⁰But he passing through the midst of them went his way, ³¹And came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and <u>taught them</u> on the sabbath days. ³²And they were astonished at <u>his doctrine</u>: for <u>his word</u> was with power.</p>	<p><i>"Many shall be purified, and made white, and tried; but the wicked shall do wickedly..."</i></p>
<p>...and <u>knowledge shall be increased</u>.</p>	<p>...and none of the wicked shall understand; but the wise shall understand." Daniel 12:10</p>	<p><i>...and none of the wicked shall understand; but the wise shall understand." Daniel 12:10</i></p>

**Whether it be Judaism, Catholicism, or any other -ism.*

CHAPTER 4

THE 144,000

This chapter consists of two sets of scriptures. The first set is the pattern between Genesis, Luke, Revelation, and Judges. The second set is the pattern between Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Ezekiel. Both sets of scriptures match because they have the same pattern. The pattern is as follows:

1. Barrenness or Desolation
2. The Visitation of the LORD
3. Prophetic Word / Voice / Trumpet
4. The Seed of Promise Comes Forth (the 144,000)
5. Thunder / Earthquake / Rejoicing / First Fruits
6. Preaching of the Gospel
7. Fall of Babylon
8. Forbidden Fruit / Mark of the Beast
9. Believers Are Oppressed Then Delivered
10. Judgment Upon the Children of Disobedience and Upon the Devil's Kingdom

Other Notes for Consideration

The “woman” is the Body of Christ. The forbidden fruit of the vine is the lust of the world.

In the beginning, the United States began as the garden of Eden but in the end it is compared with the fall of Babylon.

Judgment upon the third part of creation parallels the judgment upon the third part of the angels that fell from grace. (ref. Rev. 8:7-9 and Rev. 12:4, 9)

The advent of the 144,000 is one of the deeper mysteries of the Bible and it is an earth-shaking event.

Compare this chapter with the three preceding chapters and study how their patterns fit into the big picture of the last days as revealed in this chapter about the 144,000. Then compare this chapter with the following chapter on Moses to see how close a match there is between the historical and future patterns.

Only the pattern highlights have been presented in the Isaiah / Jeremiah / Ezekiel pattern match due to the volume of scriptures the three books represent. The reader is encouraged to further study the books of Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Ezekiel in order to get more details about the context of the highlights presented here.

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 2:

¹Thus the heavens and the earth

...were finished, and all the host of them.

²And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made.

³And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made.

⁴These *are* the generations of the heavens and of the earth when they were created, in the day that the LORD God made the earth and the heavens,

⁵And every plant of the field before it was in the earth, and every herb of the field before it grew: for the LORD God had not caused it to rain upon the earth, and

... there was not a man to till the ground.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

¹Forasmuch as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among us,

²Even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eyewitnesses, and ministers of the word;

³It seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus,

⁴That thou mightest know the certainty of those things, wherein thou hast been instructed.

⁵There was in the days of Herod, the king of Judaea, a certain priest named Zacharias,

...of the course of Abia:

...and his wife *was* of the daughters of Aaron, and her name *was* Elisabeth.

⁶And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless.

⁷And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren, and they both were *now* well stricken in years.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 7:

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 14:

5TH WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

¹And the children of Israel did evil again in the sight of the LORD; and the LORD delivered them into the hand of the Philistines forty years.

²And there was ...a certain man of Zorah,

...of the family of the Danites, whose name *was* Manoah;

...and his wife was barren, and bare not.

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

4TH WITNESS

5TH WITNESS

LUKE 1:

⁸And it came to pass, that while he executed the priest's office before God in the order of his course,

⁹According to the custom of the priest's office, his lot was to burn incense when he went into the temple of the Lord.

¹⁰And the whole multitude of the people were praying without at the time of incense.

¹¹And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord standing on the right side of the altar of incense.

¹²And when Zacharias saw *him*, he was troubled, and fear fell upon him.

¹³But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias:

...for thy prayer is heard:

GENESIS 2:

⁶But there went up a mist from the earth,

...and watered the whole face of the ground.

REVELATION 7:

¹And after these things I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree.

²And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God:

...and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea,

³Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads.

REVELATION 14:

¹And I looked, and, lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion...

JUDGES 13:

³And the angel of the LORD appeared unto the woman, and said unto her,

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 2:

⁷And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

¹³...and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son,

..and thou shalt call his name John.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 7:

⁴And I heard the number of them which were sealed: and there were sealed an hundred and forty and four thousand of all the tribes of the children of Israel.

⁵Of the tribe of Judah were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Reuben were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelve thousand.

⁶Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Nephtalim were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed twelve thousand.

⁷Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Levi were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelve thousand.

⁸Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Joseph were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Benjamin were sealed twelve thousand.

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 14:

¹...and with him an hundred forty and four thousand, having his Father's name written in their foreheads.

²And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps:

5TH WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

³...Behold now, thou *art* barren, and bearest not: but thou shalt conceive, and bear a son.

(*Samson*)

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 2:

⁸And the LORD God planted a garden eastward in Eden;

...and there he put the man whom he had formed.

⁹And out of the ground made the LORD God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight,

...and good for food; the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

¹⁴And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and many shall rejoice at his birth.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 7:

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 14:

³And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the elders:

...and no man could learn that song but the hundred and forty and four thousand, which were redeemed from the earth.

⁴These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth. These were redeemed from among men, being the firstfruits unto God and to the Lamb.

⁵And in their mouth was found no guile; for they are without fault before the throne of God.

5TH WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 2:

¹⁰And a river went out of Eden to water the garden; and from thence it was parted,

...and became into four heads. (← *The four gospels*)

¹¹The name of the first is Pison: that *is* it which compasseth the whole land of Havilah, where *there is* gold;

¹²And the gold of that land *is* good: there *is* bdellium and the onyx stone.

¹³And the name of the second river *is* Gihon: the same *is* it that compasseth the whole land of Ethiopia. (Gihon = "stream")

¹⁴And the name of the third river *is* Hiddekel: that *is* it which goeth toward the east of Assyria. And the fourth river *is* Euphrates. (Hiddekel = "rapid") (Euphrates = "bursting, sweet")

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 7:

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 14:

⁶And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach

...unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people,

⁷Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him; for the hour of his judgment is come: and worship him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.

5TH WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

(← "*And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.*" Matthew 24:14)

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 2:

¹⁵And the LORD God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden (← *The U.S.A. in its early years.*) to dress it and to keep it.

¹⁶And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat:

¹⁷But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

¹⁵For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink;

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 7:

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 14:

⁸And there followed another angel, saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city,

...because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

⁹And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive *his* mark in his forehead, or in his hand,

(The mark of the beast is distributed.)

¹⁰The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb:

¹¹And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.

5TH WITNESS

(← *The U.S.A. in its latter years.*)

JUDGES 13:

⁴Now therefore beware, I pray thee, and drink not wine nor strong drink, and eat not any unclean *thing*:

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 2:

¹⁸And the LORD God said, *It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him.*

¹⁹And out of the ground the LORD God formed every beast of the field, and every fowl of the air; and brought *them* unto Adam to see what he would call them: and whatsoever Adam called every living creature, that was the name thereof.

²⁰And Adam gave names to all cattle, and to the fowl of the air, and to every beast of the field; but for Adam there was not found an help meet for him.

²¹And the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept...

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

¹⁵...and he shall ...be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb.

¹⁶And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 7:

⁹After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands;

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 14:

¹²Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.

¹³And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; and their works do follow them.

5TH WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

⁵For, lo, thou shalt conceive, and bear a son; and no razor shall come on his head: for the child shall be a Nazarite unto God from the womb:

...and he shall begin to deliver Israel out of the hand of the Philistines.

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 2:
21...and he

...took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof;

22 And the rib, which the LORD God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man.

23 And Adam said, This *is* now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man.
24 Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.

25 And they were both naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:
17 And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias...

...to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children,

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 7:

10 And cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb.

11 And all the angels stood round about the throne, and *about* the elders and the four beasts, and fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God,

12 Saying, Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might, *be* unto our God for ever and ever. Amen.

13 And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are arrayed in white robes? and whence came they?

14 And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.

15 Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple: and he that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them.

16 They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat.

17 For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters: and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes. (*end of Rev. 7*)

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 14:

14 And I looked, and behold a white cloud, and upon the cloud *one* sat like unto the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle.

15 And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, Thrust in thy sickle, and reap: for the time is come for thee to reap; for the harvest of the earth is ripe.

16 And he that sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth; and the earth was reaped.

5TH WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

8 Then Manoah entreated the LORD, and said, O my Lord, let the man of God which thou didst send come again unto us,

(← *Michael?*)

12 And Manoah said, Now let thy words come to pass. How shall we order the child, and how shall we do unto him?

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 3:

¹Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?

²And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden:

³But of the fruit of the tree which *is* in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die.

⁴And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die:

⁵For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 8:

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 14:

¹⁷And another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle. (*Michael?*)

¹⁸And another angel came out from the altar, which had power over fire; and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharp sickle... (*Gabriel?*)

5TH WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

¹³And the angel of the LORD said unto Manoah, Of all that I said...

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 3:

⁶And when the woman

...saw that the tree was good for food,

...and that it was pleasant to the eyes,

...and a tree to be desired to make one wise,

...she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.

⁷And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they *were* naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons.

⁸And they heard the voice of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God amongst the trees of the garden.

⁹And the LORD God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where *art* thou?

¹⁰And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself.

¹¹And he said, Who told thee that thou *wast* naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat?

¹²And the man said, The woman whom thou gavest *to be* with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

¹⁷...and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just;

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 8:

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 14:

¹⁸...and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth; for her grapes are fully ripe.

5TH WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

¹³...unto the woman

...let her beware.

¹⁴She may not eat of any thing that cometh of the vine,

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 3:

¹³And the LORD God said unto the woman, What *is* this *that* thou hast done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat.

¹⁴And the LORD God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life:

¹⁵And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.

¹⁶Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire *shall be* to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee.

¹⁷And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life;

¹⁸Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field;

¹⁹In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou *art*, and unto dust shalt thou return.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 8:

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 14:

¹⁹And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast *it* into the great winepress of the wrath of God.

²⁰And the winepress was trodden without the city,

...and blood came out of the winepress, even unto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand *and* six hundred furlongs.

(End of Revelation 14)

5TH WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

...neither let her drink wine or strong drink, nor eat any unclean *thing*: all that I commanded her let her observe.

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 3:

²⁰And Adam called his wife's name Eve; because she was the mother of all living.

²¹Unto Adam also and to his wife did the LORD God
...make coats of skins,

...and clothed them.

²²And the LORD God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever:

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

¹⁷...to make ready a people

...prepared for the Lord.

¹⁸And Zacharias said unto the angel,

...Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years.

¹⁹And the angel answering said unto him,

...I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God; and am sent to speak unto thee, and to show thee these glad tidings.

²⁰And, behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed,

...because thou believest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 8:

¹And when he had
...opened the seventh seal,
there was

...silence in heaven
about the space of half an hour.

4TH WITNESS

5TH WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

¹⁵And Manoah said unto the angel of the LORD, I pray thee, let us detain thee, until we shall have

...made ready a kid for thee.

¹⁶And the angel of the LORD said unto Manoah, Though thou detain me, I will not eat of thy bread: and if thou wilt offer a burnt offering, thou must offer it unto the LORD. For Manoah knew not that he was an angel of the LORD.

¹⁷And Manoah said unto the angel of the LORD,

...What is thy name, that when thy sayings come to pass we may do thee honour?

¹⁸And the angel of the LORD said unto him,

...Why askest thou thus after my name

(*Gabriel*)

...seeing it is secret?

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 3:

²³Therefore the LORD God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken.

²⁴So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims,

...and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

²¹And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple.

²²And when he came out, he could not speak unto them:

...and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple:

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 8:

²And I saw the seven angels which stood before God; and to them were given seven trumpets.

³And another angel came and stood

(*Gabriel*)

...at the altar,

...having a golden censer; and there was given unto him much incense,

...that he should offer it with the prayers of all saints upon the golden altar which was before the throne.

⁴And the smoke of the incense, which came with the prayers of the saints,

...ascended up before God out of the angel's hand.

⁵And the angel took the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar,

...and cast it into the earth: and there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings, and an earthquake.

4TH WITNESS

5TH WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

¹⁹So Manoah took a kid with a meat offering, and offered it upon a rock unto the LORD:

...and the angel did wondrously; and Manoah and his wife looked on.

²⁰For it came to pass, when the flame went up toward heaven from off the altar,

...that the angel of the LORD

...ascended in the flame of the altar.

...And Manoah and his wife looked on it, and

...fell on their faces to the ground.

²¹But the angel of the LORD did no more appear to Manoah and to his wife. Then Manoah knew that he *was* an angel of the LORD.

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 4:

¹And Adam knew Eve his wife; and she conceived, and bare Cain, and said, I have gotten a man from the LORD.

²And she again bare his brother Abel. And Abel was a keeper of sheep, but Cain was a tiller of the ground.

³And in process of time it came to pass, that Cain brought of the fruit of the ground an offering unto the LORD.

⁴And Abel, he also brought of the firstlings of his flock and of the fat thereof. And the LORD had respect unto Abel and to his offering:

⁵But unto Cain and to his offering he had not respect. And Cain was very wroth, and his countenance fell.

⁶And the LORD said unto Cain, Why art thou wroth? and why is thy countenance fallen?

⁷If thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted? and if thou doest not well, sin lieth at the door. And unto thee *shall be* his desire, and thou shalt rule over him.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

²...for he beckoned unto them, and remained speechless.

²³And it came to pass, that, as soon as the days of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his own house.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 8:

⁶And the seven angels which had the seven trumpets prepared themselves to sound.

4TH WITNESS

5TH WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

²²And Manoah said unto his wife, We shall surely die, because we have seen God.

²³But his wife said unto him, If the LORD were pleased to kill us, he would not have ...received a burnt offering and a meat offering at our hands,

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 4:

⁸And Cain talked with Abel his brother: and it came to pass, when they were in the field, that Cain rose up against Abel his brother, and slew him.

⁹And the LORD said unto Cain, Where *is* Abel thy brother? And he said, I know not: *Am I* my brother's keeper?

¹⁰And he said, What hast thou done? the voice of thy brother's blood crieth unto me from the ground.

¹¹And now *art* thou cursed from the earth, which hath opened her mouth to receive thy brother's blood from thy hand;

¹²When thou tillest the ground, it shall not henceforth yield unto thee *her strength*; a fugitive and a vagabond shalt thou be in the earth.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

(Commentary: Judgment upon the third part of creation signifies the corruption associated with the third part of the angels that fell from grace. Three brothers: Cain, Abel, & Seth; one fell from grace. Three archangels: Lucifer, Gabriel, & Michael; one fell from grace. Cain / Lucifer = tiller of the ground, keeper of the earth? Abel / Gabriel = keeper of the sheep? Seth / Michael = patriarch of the generations of Israel? Three other brothers: Shem, Ham, Japheth; one fell from grace. Three spiritual brothers: Peter, James, John; one fell but was restored unto grace.)

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 8:

⁷The first angel sounded...
...hail and fire mingled with blood, ...cast upon the earth:

...third part of trees was burnt up,
...all green grass was burnt up.

⁸And the second angel sounded...
...a great mountain burning with fire was cast into the sea:
...third part of the sea became blood;
⁹...third part of the creatures ...in the sea, ...died;
...third part of the ships were destroyed.

¹⁰And the third angel sounded...
...great star from heaven, burning as it were a lamp,
...fell upon the third part of the rivers,
...upon the fountains of waters;
¹¹...name of the star
...Wormwood: ...many men died
...waters ...made bitter.

4TH WITNESS

5TH WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

²³...neither would he have showed us all these things, nor would as at this time have told us such things as these.

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

4TH WITNESS

5TH WITNESS

LUKE 1:

GENESIS 4:

¹³And Cain said unto the LORD, My punishment *is* greater than I can bear.

¹⁴Behold, thou hast driven me out this day from the face of the earth; and from thy face shall I be hid; and I shall be a fugitive and a vagabond in the earth; and it shall come to pass, *that* every one that findeth me shall slay me.

¹⁵And the LORD said unto him, Therefore whosoever slayeth Cain, vengeance shall be taken on him sevenfold. And the LORD set a mark upon Cain, lest any finding him should kill him.

¹⁶And Cain went out from the presence of the LORD, and dwelt in the land of Nod, on the east of Eden.

REVELATION 8:

¹²And the fourth angel sounded...
...the third part of the sun was smitten, ...the third part of the moon, ...the third part of the stars; ...the third part of them was darkened, ...the day shone not for a third part of it, ...the night likewise.

¹³And I beheld, and heard an angel flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, Woe, woe, woe, to the inhabitants of the earth by reason of the other voices of the trumpet of the three angels, which are yet to sound!

JUDGES 13:

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 4:

¹⁷And Cain knew his wife; and she conceived, and bare Enoch:

...and he builded a city,

...and called the name of the city,
after the name of his son, Enoch.

*(Generations of Enoch,
Gen. 4:18-24)*

(Birth of Seth, Gen. 4:25-26)

*(Book of the Generations of Adam,
Gen. 5:1-32)*

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

²⁴And after those days his wife Elisabeth conceived,

...and hid herself five months,
saying,

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 9:

¹And the fifth angel sounded,
...a star fall from heaven unto the
earth: ...to him was given the key
of the bottomless pit.

²...opened the bottomless pit;
...smoke out of the pit, as the
smoke of a great furnace;
...sun and the air were darkened
by reason of the smoke of the pit.

³...out of the smoke locusts upon
the earth:

⁴And it was commanded them
that they should ...hurt ...only
those men which have not the
seal of God in their foreheads.

⁵...that they should be tormented
five months:

⁶...death shall flee from them.
¹¹...a king over them, ...the angel
of the bottomless pit, whose
name in the Hebrew tongue *is*
Abaddon, but in the Greek
tongue hath *his* name Apollyon.

¹²One woe is past; *and*, behold,
there come two woes more
hereafter.

4TH WITNESS

5TH WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

²⁴And the woman bare a son,
and called his name Samson:
and the child grew,

(↖ ↑ *“And when the dragon
saw that he was cast unto the
earth, he persecuted the
woman which brought forth
the man child.” Revelation
12:13*)

(← *“And to the woman were
given two wings of a great
eagle, that she might fly into
the wilderness, into her place,
where she is nourished for a
time, and times, and half a
time, from the face of the
serpent.” Revelation 12:14*)

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 6:

¹And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them,

²That the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they *were* fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose.

³And the LORD said,

...My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also *is* flesh:

...yet his days shall be an hundred and twenty years.

⁴There were giants in the earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare *children* to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown.

⁵And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.

⁶And it repented the LORD that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart.

(The Lord instructs Noah on preparing an Ark, v.7-22)

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

²⁵Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the days wherein he looked on *me*,

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 9:

¹³And the sixth angel sounded, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar which is before God,

¹⁴...Loose the four angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates.

¹⁵...prepared for an hour, and a day, and a month, and a year, for to slay the third part of men.

¹⁶...the number of the army of the horsemen were two hundred thousand thousand:

¹⁷...out of their mouths issued fire and smoke and brimstone.

¹⁸...the third part of men killed,

¹⁹...their power is in their mouth, and in their tails:

²⁰...the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues yet repented not of the works of their hands,

²¹Neither repented they of their murders, ...sorceries, ...fornication, ...thefts.

4TH WITNESS

5TH WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

²⁴...and the LORD

(← *“And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood.” Revelation 12:15)*

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 7:

¹And the LORD said unto Noah,
Come thou and all thy house into
the ark; for thee have I seen
righteous before me in this
generation.

²Of every clean beast thou shalt
take to thee by sevens, the male
and his female: and of beasts that
are not clean by two, the male and
his female.

³Of fowls also of the air by sevens,
the male and the female; to keep
seed alive upon the face of all the
earth.

⁴For yet seven days, and I will
cause it to rain upon the earth forty
days and forty nights; and every
living substance that I have made
will I destroy from off the face of the
earth.

⁵And Noah did according unto all
that the LORD commanded him.

⁶And Noah *was* six hundred years
old when the flood of waters was
upon the earth.

⁷And Noah went in, and his sons,
and his wife, and his sons' wives
with him, into the ark, because of
the waters of the flood.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 10:

¹And I saw another mighty angel
come down from heaven, clothed
with a cloud: and a rainbow *was*
upon his head, and his face *was*
as it were the sun, and his feet as
pillars of fire:

²And he had in his hand a little
book open: and he set his right
foot upon the sea, and *his* left
foot on the earth,

³And cried with a loud voice, as
when a lion roareth:

...and when he had cried, seven
thunders uttered their voices.

⁴And when the seven thunders
had uttered their voices...

4TH WITNESS

5TH WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

(← *Michael the archangel*)

(*Infinity Bible Code:*
Michael = 101, 202, 303, etc.
For 303, chapter is Mark 15.
Likely verse is: " ³⁷And Jesus
cried with a loud voice, and
gave up the ghost.")

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 7:

⁸Of clean beasts, and of beasts that are not clean, and of fowls, and of every thing that creepeth upon the earth,

⁹There went in two and two unto Noah into the ark, the male and the female, as God had commanded Noah.

¹⁰And it came to pass after seven days, that the waters of the flood were upon the earth.

¹¹In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened.

¹²And the rain was upon the earth forty days and forty nights.

¹³In the selfsame day entered Noah, and Shem, and Ham, and Japheth, the sons of Noah, and Noah's wife, and the three wives of his sons with them, into the ark;

¹⁴They, and every beast after his kind, and all the cattle after their kind, and every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth after his kind, and every fowl after his kind, every bird of every sort.

¹⁵And they went in unto Noah into the ark, two and two of all flesh, wherein *is* the breath of life.

¹⁶And they that went in, went in male and female of all flesh, as God had commanded him: and the LORD shut him in.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 10:

⁴...I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Seal up those things which the seven thunders uttered, and write them not.

4TH WITNESS

5TH WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

GENESIS 7:

¹⁷And the flood was forty days upon the earth; and the waters increased, and bare up the ark, and it was lift up above the earth.

(The great flood prevailed upon the earth for 150 days, v.18-24)

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

²⁵... to take away my reproach among men.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 10:

⁵And the angel which I saw stand upon the sea and upon the earth lifted up his hand to heaven, ⁶And sware by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which are therein, that there should be time no longer:

⁷But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, ... the mystery of God should be finished, as he hath declared to his servants the prophets.

(↑ *“Behold, I show you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.”*

1 Corinthians 15:51-52)

4TH WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

²⁴... blessed him.

²⁵And the Spirit of the LORD began to move him at times in the camp of Dan between Zorah and Eshtaol.

5TH WITNESS

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

ISAIAH – Part 1

^{1:7}Your country *is desolate*, your cities *are* burned with fire...

^{1:9}Except the LORD of hosts had left unto us a very small remnant, we should have been as Sodom, and we should have been like unto Gomorrah.

^{3:8}For Jerusalem is ruined, and Judah is fallen: because their tongue and their doings *are* against the LORD...

^{6:6}Then flew one of the seraphims unto me, having a live coal in his hand...

^{6:8}Also I heard the voice of the Lord...

^{6:9}And he said, Go, and tell this people, Hear ye indeed, but understand not; and see ye indeed, but perceive not.

^{6:11}Then said I, Lord, how long? And he answered, Until the cities be wasted without inhabitant, and the houses without man, and the land be utterly desolate,

^{6:12}And the LORD have removed men far away, and *there be* a great forsaking in the midst of the land.

^{11:2}And the spirit of the LORD shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD;

2ND WITNESS

ISAIAH – Part 2

^{40:3}The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the LORD, make straight in the desert a highway for our God.

^{40:5}And the glory of the LORD shall be revealed, and all flesh shall see *it* together: for the mouth of the LORD hath spoken it.

^{41:10}Fear thou not; for I *am* with thee: be not dismayed; for I *am thy God*: I will strengthen thee; yea, I will help thee; yea, I will uphold thee with the right hand of my righteousness.

3RD WITNESS

JEREMIAH

^{51:5}For Israel *hath not been* forsaken, nor Judah of his God, of the LORD of hosts; though their land was filled with sin against the Holy One of Israel.

4TH WITNESS

EZEKIEL

^{37:1}The hand of the LORD was upon me, and carried me out in the spirit of the LORD, and set me down in the midst of the valley which was full of bones,

^{37:2}And caused me to pass by them round about: and, behold, *there were* very many in the open valley; and, lo, they were very dry.

^{37:5}Thus saith the Lord GOD unto these bones; Behold, I will cause breath to enter into you, and ye shall live:

^{37:6}And I will lay sinews upon you, and will bring up flesh upon you, and cover you with skin, and put breath in you, and ye shall live;

...and ye shall know that I *am* the LORD.

^{37:7}...and behold a shaking, and the bones came together, bone to his bone.

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

ISAIAH – Part 1

^{7:14}...and shall call his name
Immanuel.

^{7:14}Therefore the Lord himself shall
give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall
conceive, and bear a son...

^{11:1}And there shall come forth a rod
out of the stem of Jesse, and a
Branch shall grow out of his roots:

^{9:6}For unto us a child is born, unto us a
son is given: and the government shall
be upon his shoulder...

^{9:6}...and his name shall be called
Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty
God, The everlasting Father, The
Prince of Peace.

^{12:2}Behold, God *is* my salvation; I will
trust, and not be afraid: for the LORD
JEHOVAH is my strength and *my*
song; he also is become my salvation.

2ND WITNESS

ISAIAH – Part 2

^{42:1}Behold my servant, whom I
uphold; mine elect, *in whom* my
soul delighteth;

...I have put my spirit upon him: he
shall bring forth judgment to the
Gentiles.

3RD WITNESS

JEREMIAH

^{51:10}The LORD hath brought forth
our righteousness:

...come, and let us declare in Zion
the work of the LORD our God.

4TH WITNESS

EZEKIEL

^{37:12}Therefore prophesy and say
unto them, Thus saith the Lord
GOD; Behold, O my people,

...I will open your graves, and
cause you to come up out of your
graves,

...and bring you into the land of
Israel.

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

ISAIAH – Part 1

^{13:1}The burden of Babylon, which
Isaiah the son of Amoz did see.

^{14:4}That thou shalt take up this proverb
against the king of Babylon, and say,
How hath the oppressor ceased! the
golden city ceased!

^{21:1}The burden of the desert of the
sea. As whirlwinds in the south pass
through; so it cometh from the desert,
from a terrible land.

^{13:8}And they shall be afraid: pangs and
sorrows shall take hold of them; they
shall be in pain as a woman that
travailleth: they shall be amazed one
at another; their faces *shall be as*
flames.

2ND WITNESS

ISAIAH – Part 2

^{47:1}Come down, and sit in the dust,
O virgin daughter of Babylon, sit on
the ground: *there is* no throne,

...O daughter of the Chaldeans: for
thou shalt no more be called tender
and delicate.

^{47:9}But these two *things* shall come
to thee in a moment in one day, the
loss of children, and widowhood:
they shall come upon thee in their
perfection for the multitude of thy
sorceries, *and* for the great
abundance of thine enchantments.

3RD WITNESS

JEREMIAH

^{51:1}Thus saith the LORD; Behold,
I will raise up against Babylon, and
against them that dwell in the midst
of them that rise up against me, a
destroying wind;

^{51:3}Against *him that* bendeth let the
archer bend his bow, and against
him that lifteth himself up in his
brigandine: and spare ye not her
young men; destroy ye utterly all her
host.

⁴Thus the slain shall fall in the land
of the Chaldeans, and *they that are*
thrust through in her streets.

4TH WITNESS

EZEKIEL

^{38:11}And thou shalt say, I will go up
to the land of unwalled villages; I
will go to them that are at rest,
that dwell safely, all of them
dwelling without walls, and having
neither bars nor gates,

^{38:12}To take a spoil, and to take a
prey; to turn thine hand upon the
desolate places *that are now*
inhabited, and upon the people
that are gathered out of the
nations, which have gotten cattle
and goods, that dwell in the midst
of the land.

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

ISAIAH – Part 1

^{11:16}And there shall be an highway for the remnant of his people, which shall be left, from Assyria; like as it was to Israel in the day that he came up out of the land of Egypt.

^{13:12}I will make a man more precious than fine gold; even a man than the golden wedge of Ophir.

2ND WITNESS

ISAIAH – Part 2

^{48:20}Go ye forth of Babylon, flee ye from the Chaldeans, with a voice of singing declare ye, tell this, utter it *even* to the end of the earth; say ye,

...The LORD hath redeemed his servant Jacob.

^{52:11}Depart ye, depart ye, go ye out from thence, touch no unclean thing; go ye out of the midst of her; be ye clean, that bear the vessels of the LORD.

^{52:12}For ye shall not go out with haste, nor go by flight: for the LORD will go before you; and the God of Israel *will be* your reward.

^{49:22}Thus saith the Lord GOD, Behold, I will lift up mine hand to the Gentiles, and set up my standard to the people: and they shall bring thy sons in their arms, and thy daughters shall be carried upon their shoulders.

^{51:22}...Behold, I have taken out of thine hand the cup of trembling, even the dregs of the cup of my fury; thou shalt no more drink it again:

^{52:9}Break forth into joy, sing together, ye waste places of Jerusalem: for the LORD hath comforted his people, he hath redeemed Jerusalem.

3RD WITNESS

JEREMIAH

^{51:6}Flee out of the midst of Babylon, and deliver every man his soul: be not cut off in her iniquity; for this *is* the time of the LORD'S vengeance; he will render unto her a recompense.

^{51:49}As Babylon hath caused the slain of Israel to fall, so at Babylon shall fall the slain of all the earth.

^{51:50}Ye that have escaped the sword, go away, stand not still: remember the LORD afar off, and let Jerusalem come into your mind.

4TH WITNESS

EZEKIEL

^{37:21}And say unto them, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I will take the children of Israel from among the heathen, whither they be gone, and will gather them on every side, and bring them into their own land:

^{38:18}And it shall come to pass at the same time when Gog shall come against the land of Israel, saith the Lord GOD, *that* my fury shall come up in my face.

^{38:19}For in my jealousy *and* in the fire of my wrath have I spoken, Surely in that day there shall be a great shaking in the land of Israel;

THE 144,000

1ST WITNESS

ISAIAH – Part 1

^{13:6}Howl ye; for the day of the LORD is at hand; it shall come as a destruction from the Almighty.

^{13:19}And Babylon, the glory of kingdoms, the beauty of the Chaldees' excellency, shall be as when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah.

^{14:12}How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! *how* art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!

^{21:9}...And he answered and said, Babylon is fallen, is fallen; and all the graven images of her gods he hath broken unto the ground.

2ND WITNESS

ISAIAH – Part 2

^{50:2}...behold, at my rebuke I dry up the sea, I make the rivers a wilderness: their fish stinketh, because *there is* no water,

...and dieth for thirst.

^{50:3}I clothe the heavens with blackness, and I make sackcloth their covering.

^{51:23}But I will put it (cup of affliction) into the hand of them that afflict thee; which have said to thy soul, Bow down, that we may go over: and thou hast laid thy body as the ground, and as the street, to them that went over.

3RD WITNESS

JEREMIAH

^{51:42}The sea is come up upon Babylon: she is covered with the multitude of the waves thereof.

^{51:55}Because the LORD hath spoiled Babylon, and destroyed out of her the great voice; when her waves do roar like great waters, a noise of their voice is uttered:

^{51:43}Her cities are a desolation, a dry land, and a wilderness, a land wherein no man dwelleth, neither doth *any* son of man pass thereby.

4TH WITNESS

EZEKIEL

^{38:21}And I will call for a sword against him (Gog) throughout all my mountains, saith the Lord GOD: every man's sword shall be against his brother.

^{38:22}And I will plead against him with pestilence and with blood; and I will rain upon him, and upon his bands, and upon the many people that *are* with him, an overflowing rain, and great hailstones, fire, and brimstone.

^{39:2}And I will turn thee (Gog) back, and leave but the sixth part of thee, and will cause thee to come up from the north parts, and will bring thee upon the mountains of Israel:

^{39:3}And I will smite thy bow out of thy left hand, and will cause thine arrows to fall out of thy right hand.

^{39:4}Thou shalt fall upon the mountains of Israel...

CHAPTER 5

LET MY PEOPLE GO

This scripture pattern is set up so that there are four columns of scripture with a “theme scripture” at the top of the four columns. The theme scripture is the subject of the four columns. Following are thirteen pages of scripture patterns and below is a summary of each page.

- P. 1 - Theme: Let My People Go.
- The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob is Jesus.
- He is not sent to the proud, except to bring them down so His people can be free to serve God.
- Oppressed people = burdened people (ministry opportunities).
- P. 2 - God gives His Deliverer power to free people.
- His Deliverer must have a humble servant attitude. True humility is to be totally dependent upon God so that there is maximum freedom to serve God and His people.
- Serve God and not money. God provides. Money without God does not provide.
- P. 3 - God can use you to do great things when you are submissive and obedient to Him.
- There are enemies of the Word of God whose end is destruction and the devil’s kingdom, represented by sea and land, shall fall.
- P. 4 - Idolatry is dangerous because it clouds judgment. Men begin to place confidence in their abilities instead of in God. This is especially true with money because God’s people begin to think they must have it or they cannot survive or get anything done. When money becomes their source instead of God, then it has become their master whom they shall worship. They are blind fools headed for destruction.
- Instead of associating holiness with an object, it would be preferable to associate holiness with an attitude of the heart. Rituals are nothing without a pure heart. The temple of the Holy Spirit is the focus of holiness, not a physical building or altar.
- P. 5 - Man’s attempts to build a physical structure unto the glory of God results in corruption. God prefers time and money to be invested in building the lives of God’s people; not to enable their problems but to graduate them in order that they may help others with their problems. This brings glory to God, not some ornate building of worship.
- Righteousness is not possible without Jesus so a person needs to understand that to be completely dependent on the Lord results in the ability to walk the holiness walk. Follow the spirit of the law instead of depending on the letter of the law. (2 Corinthians 3:6)
- P. 6 - God’s prophetic rebuke issues forth upon the religious leadership for their idolatry and misplaced priorities. Those who do not repent seal their fate of damnation.
- When a person pursues a religious life without submitting to the daily leading of the Holy Spirit, the person will instead be led by a demonic religious spirit and be deceived into thinking that violence or bloodshed, in the name of God, is justified.
- Without submitting daily to have our self-will crucified by the Lord, our self-will changes into a law-enforcement beast that persecutes the real believers of God.
- P. 7 - At the risk of persecution and even death, the prophetic word of judgment issues forth upon the people of the land. Desolation is on the way.
- Acts 7:57 illustrates how an entire group of people manifest a demonic spirit of religion after the truth cuts them to the heart. When you are full of the Holy Spirit and speaking truth to a group, do not be surprised if someone manifests a hostile spirit of religion.
- Jerusalem is full of religious spirits. Many churches have religious spirits. In Acts 7:60, Stephen remitted the sins of those who manifested demons and attacked him. If people are to have any chance of being free from the bondage of religion, it is important for believers in Jesus / Yeshua to remit their sins.

CHAPTER 5

LET MY PEOPLE GO

- If there are not enough believers remitting sin, scripture shows that judgment takes place on those cities, churches, or groups of people who are doing evil and violence in the name of God. (Matt. 10:15, 23:38, Revel. 11:13)
- P. 8 - Theme: Pharaoh King of Egypt.
- Pharaoh = Pharisee
- The adversary is in the form of a religious leader with a religious spirit. This is the “wolf” that Jesus warns about. The religious spirit will use violence to get its way, including verbal, accusatory violence. The believer should hold their peace and remain “harmless as a dove” until the religious storm blows over. The religious person is full of the law but has little love, “...by their fruits ye shall know them.” (Matthew 7:20)
- P. 9 - Theme: The Devil Pursues God’s People.
- Persecution produces new Christians, separates fake Christians from real ones, and gets the gospel spread.
- Those who try to save their life by betraying their brethren will lose their eternal life in hell.
- In the spring at some point in the near future, around the time of passover, a prophetic event will take place. The 144,000 will come forth, also referred to as the “man child”. It will come at a time of great distress and trouble upon Israel and the USA.
- P. 10 - Theme: God Commands His People To Go Forward.
- God’s people flee the persecution. This helps to spread the gospel message.
- The Lord has a place for His people to flee to. They must leave their former life behind.
- P. 11 - Theme: The Lord Executes Judgment Upon The Enemy.
- The devil’s servants try to chase after God’s people but it will be to their own destruction.
- God’s preaching of the Word goes forth and the devil’s servants are defeated and never oppress God’s people again.
- P. 12 - Theme: The Lord Saves His People From The Enemy.
- After a defeat, it is easy to see who the devil’s servants are and who the Lord’s servants are.
- The Lord’s servants are willing to die for their faith, and this assures they have the victory of life.
- P. 13 - Theme: The People’s Faith In God Increases.
- For faith to grow, there must be the test of going through the fire.
- God’s people who are willing to die for the Lord while going through the fire, realize they make it through alive because God is faithful. This increases their faith so they can be strong in the Lord and in the power of His might. It also produces peace that surpasses all understanding and life is more fulfilling. The reward is more than worth the cost.

LET MY PEOPLE GO

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

4TH WITNESS

“And Moses and Aaron came in unto Pharaoh, and said unto him, Thus saith the LORD God of the Hebrews, How long wilt thou refuse to humble thyself before me? let my people go, that they may serve me.” Exodus 10:3

ACTS 7:

³²Saying, I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. Then Moses trembled, and durst not behold.

³³Then said the Lord to him, Put off thy shoes from thy feet: for the place where thou standest is holy ground.

³⁵This Moses whom they refused, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge? the same did God send *to be* a ruler and a deliverer by the hand of the angel which appeared to him in the bush.

³⁴I have seen, I have seen the affliction of my people which is in Egypt, and I have heard their groaning, and am come down to deliver them. And now come, I will send thee into Egypt.
(*This verse intentionally out of sequence for illustration.*)

MATTHEW 10:

⁵These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying,

Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not:

⁶But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

⁷And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand.

⁸Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils:

MATTHEW 23:

¹Then spake Jesus to the multitude,

...and to his disciples,

²Saying, The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat:

³All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not.

⁴For they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay them on men's shoulders;

REVELATION 11:

LET MY PEOPLE GO

1ST WITNESS

ACTS 7:

³⁶He brought them out, after that he had showed wonders and signs in the land of Egypt, and in the Red sea, and in the wilderness forty years.

(And the LORD said unto Moses, Yet will I bring one plague more upon Pharaoh, and upon Egypt; afterwards he will let you go hence: when he shall let you go, he shall surely thrust you out hence altogether. Speak now in the ears of the people, and let every man borrow of his neighbour, and every woman of her neighbour, jewels of silver, and jewels of gold. Exodus 11:1-2)

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 10:

⁸...freely ye have received, freely give.

⁹Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses,

¹⁰Nor scrip for your journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet staves: for the workman is worthy of his meat.

¹¹And into whatsoever city or town ye shall enter, inquire who in it is worthy; and there abide till ye go thence.

3RD WITNESS

MATTHEW 23:

⁴...but they *themselves* will not move them with one of their fingers.

⁵But all their works they do for to be seen of men: they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments,
⁶And love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues,

⁷And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.

⁸But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, *even* Christ; and all ye are brethren.

⁹And call no *man* your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven.

¹⁰Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, *even* Christ.

¹¹But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant.

¹²And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased;

...and he that shall humble himself

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 11:

³And I will give power unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred and threescore days,

...clothed in sackcloth.

LET MY PEOPLE GO

1ST WITNESS

ACTS 7:

³⁷This is that Moses, which said unto the children of Israel, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear.

³⁸This is he, that was in the church in the wilderness with the angel which spake to him in the mount Sina, and *with* our fathers: who received the lively oracles to give unto us:

³⁹To whom our fathers would not obey, but thrust *him* from them, and in their hearts turned back again into Egypt,

⁴⁰Saying unto Aaron, Make us gods to go before us: for *as for* this Moses, which brought us out of the land of Egypt (*through the Red Sea*), we wot not what is become of him.

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 10:

¹²And when ye come into an house, salute it.

¹³And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you.

¹⁴And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, when ye depart out of that house or city,

...shake off the dust of your feet.

3RD WITNESS

MATTHEW 23:

¹²...shall be exalted.

¹³But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in *yourselves*, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in.

¹⁴Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation.

¹⁵Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves.

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 11:

⁴These are the two olive trees, and the two candlesticks standing before the God of the earth.

(See Chapter 20 of first volume of The Two Witnesses)

⁵And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, he must in this manner be killed.

⁶These have power to shut heaven, that it rain not in the days of their prophecy: and have power over waters to turn them to blood, and to smite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will.

LET MY PEOPLE GO

1ST WITNESS

ACTS 7:

⁴¹And they made a calf in those days, and offered sacrifice unto the idol, and rejoiced in the works of their own hands.

⁴²Then God turned, and gave them up to worship the host of heaven; as it is written in the book of the prophets, O ye house of Israel, have ye offered to me slain beasts and sacrifices by the space of forty years in the wilderness?

⁴³Yea, ye took up the tabernacle of Moloch, and the star of your god Remphan, figures which ye made to worship them: and I will carry you away beyond Babylon.

⁴⁴Our fathers had the tabernacle of witness in the wilderness, as he had appointed, speaking unto Moses, that he should make it according to the fashion that he had seen.

⁴⁵Which also our fathers that came after brought in with Jesus into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God drave out before the face of our fathers, unto the days of David;

⁴⁶Who found favour before God, and desired to find a tabernacle for the God of Jacob.

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 10:

3RD WITNESS

MATTHEW 23:

¹⁶Woe unto you, ye blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor!

¹⁷Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold?

¹⁸And, Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty.

¹⁹Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?

²⁰Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 11:

LET MY PEOPLE GO

1ST WITNESS

ACTS 7:

⁴⁷But Solomon built him an house.

⁴⁸Howbeit the most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands; as saith the prophet,

⁴⁹Heaven is my throne, and earth is my footstool:

...what house will ye build me? saith the Lord: or what *is* the place of my rest?

⁵⁰Hath not my hand made all these things?

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 10:

3RD WITNESS

MATTHEW 23:

²¹And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.

²²And he that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.

²³Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier *matters* of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

²⁴Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel.

²⁵Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess.

²⁶*Thou* blind Pharisee, cleanse first that *which is* within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.

²⁷Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead *men's* bones, and of all uncleanness.

²⁸Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 11:

LET MY PEOPLE GO

1ST WITNESS

ACTS 7:

⁵¹Ye stiffnecked and uncircumcised in heart and ears,

...ye do always resist the Holy Ghost:
as your fathers *did*, so *do* ye.

⁵²Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? and they have slain them which showed before of the coming of the Just One; of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers:

⁵³Who have received the law by the disposition of angels, and have not kept *it*.

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 10:

3RD WITNESS

MATTHEW 23:

²⁹Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous,

³⁰And say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.

³¹Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets.

³²Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.

³³Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape ...the damnation of hell?

³⁴Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes: and *some of them ye shall kill and crucify;* and *some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them* from city to city:

³⁵That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar.

³⁶Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation.

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 11:

⁷And when they shall have finished their testimony, the beast that ascendeth out of the bottomless pit

...shall make war against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them.

LET MY PEOPLE GO

1ST WITNESS

ACTS 7:

⁵⁴When they heard these things, they were cut to the heart, and they gnashed on him with *their* teeth.

⁵⁵But he, being full of the Holy Ghost, looked up stedfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God,

⁵⁶And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God.

⁵⁷Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord,

⁵⁸And cast *him* out of the city,

...and stoned *him*:

...and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young man's feet, whose name was Saul.

⁵⁹And they stoned Stephen, calling upon *God*, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.

⁶⁰And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice,

...Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep.

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 10:

¹⁵Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrha

...in the day of judgment, than for that city.

3RD WITNESS

MATTHEW 23:

³⁷O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets,

...and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, ...even as a hen gathereth her chickens under *her* wings, and ye would not!

³⁸Behold, your house is left unto you desolate.

³⁹For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 11:

⁸And their dead bodies *shall lie* in the street of the great city, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.

⁹...and nations shall see their dead bodies three days and an half, and shall not suffer their dead bodies to be put in graves.

¹⁰And they that dwell upon the earth shall rejoice over them, and make merry...

¹²And they heard a great voice from heaven... Come up hither...

¹³And the same hour was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell...

(Selected verses intentionally omitted for brevity.)

LET MY PEOPLE GO

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

4TH WITNESS

“And the LORD hardened the heart of Pharaoh king of Egypt, and he pursued after the children of Israel: and the children of Israel went out with an high* hand.” Exodus 14:8

ACTS 8:

¹And Saul was consenting unto his death.

MATTHEW 10:

¹⁶Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves.

MATTHEW 24:

⁴And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you.

⁵For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.

⁶And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all *these things* must come to pass, but the end is not yet.

⁷For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places.

⁸All these *are* the beginning of sorrows.

REVELATION 12:

¹²Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you,

...having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.

(*high = Strong's 7311, as in "a hand that is lifting them up high" above the danger)

LET MY PEOPLE GO

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

4TH WITNESS

“But the Egyptians pursued after them, all the horses *and* chariots of Pharaoh, and his horsemen, and his army, and overtook them encamping by the sea...” Exodus 14:9

ACTS 8:

¹...And at that time there was a great persecution against the church which was at Jerusalem;

MATTHEW 10:

¹⁷But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues;

¹⁸And ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles.

¹⁹But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak.

²⁰For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.

²¹And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child: and the children shall rise up against *their* parents, and cause them to be put to death.

²²And ye shall be hated of all *men* for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved.

²³But when they persecute you in this city,

MATTHEW 24:

⁹Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake.

¹⁰And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

¹¹And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.

¹²And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.

REVELATION 12:

¹³And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth **the man child**.***

***("And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, Sanctify unto me all **the firstborn**, whatsoever openeth the womb among the children of Israel, both of man and of beast: it is mine. And Moses said unto the people, Remember this day, in which ye came out from Egypt, out of the house of bondage; for by strength of hand the LORD brought you out from this place: there shall no leavened bread be eaten. This day came ye out in the month Abib. And it shall be when thy son asketh thee in time to come, saying, What is this? that thou shalt say unto him, By strength of hand the LORD brought us out from Egypt, from the house of bondage: And it came to pass, when Pharaoh would hardly let us go, that the LORD slew all the firstborn in the land of Egypt, both the firstborn of man, and the firstborn of beast: therefore I sacrifice to the LORD all that openeth the matrix, being **males**; but all the **firstborn of my children** I redeem." Exodus 13:1-4, 14, 15)

LET MY PEOPLE GO

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

4TH WITNESS

“And the LORD said unto Moses, Wherefore criest thou unto me? speak unto the children of Israel, that they go forward: But lift thou up thy rod, and stretch out thine hand over the sea, and divide it: and the children of Israel shall go on dry ground through the midst of the sea.” Exodus 14:15-16

ACTS 8:

¹...and they were all scattered abroad throughout the ...regions of Judaea and Samaria, ...except the apostles.

²And devout men carried Stephen to his burial, and made great lamentation over him.

³As for Saul, he made havock of the church, entering into every house, and haling men and women committed them to prison.

⁴Therefore they that were scattered abroad

MATTHEW 10:

²³...flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, ...till the Son of man be come.

²⁴The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord.

²⁵It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord.

...If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household?

²⁶Fear them not therefore: for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known.

MATTHEW 24:

¹⁶Then let them which be in Judaea flee

...into the mountains:

¹⁷Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take any thing out of his house:

¹⁸Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes.

¹⁹And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days!

²⁰But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day:

(Verses 16-20 intentionally out of sequence for illustration.)

REVELATION 12:

¹⁴And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly

...into the wilderness, into her place,

LET MY PEOPLE GO

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

4TH WITNESS

“And the Egyptians shall know that I am the LORD... ...the Egyptians said, Let us flee from the face of Israel; for the LORD fighteth for them against the Egyptians. ...And the waters returned, and covered the chariots, and the horsemen, *and* all the host of Pharaoh that came into the sea after them; there remained not so much as one of them.” Exodus 14:18, 25, 28

ACTS 8:

⁴ ...went every where preaching the word.

⁵ Then Philip went down to the city of Samaria, and preached Christ unto them.

⁶ And the people with one accord gave heed unto those things which Philip spake, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did.

⁷ For unclean spirits, crying with loud voice, came out of many...

(And went down into the earth.)

MATTHEW 10:

²⁷ *What I tell you in darkness, that speak ye in light: and what ye hear in the ear, that preach ye upon the housetops.*

²⁸ *And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.*

(Inside of the earth.)

²⁹ *Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father.*

³⁰ *But the very hairs of your head are all numbered.*

³¹ *Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows.*

MATTHEW 24:

¹⁴ *And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations;*

...and then shall the end come.

¹⁵ *When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet,*

(Antichrist rising out of the earth.)

REVELATION 12:

¹⁴ ...where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent.

¹⁵ And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood.

¹⁶ And the earth helped the woman,

...and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth.

LET MY PEOPLE GO

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

4TH WITNESS

“Thus the LORD saved Israel that day out of the hand of the Egyptians; and Israel saw the Egyptians dead upon the sea shore.” Exodus 14:30

ACTS 8:

⁷...that were possessed with them: and many taken with palsies, and that were lame, were healed.

⁸And there was great joy in that city.

⁹But there was a certain man, called Simon, which beforetime in the same city used sorcery, and bewitched the people of Samaria, giving out that himself was some great one:

¹⁰To whom they all gave heed, from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is the great power of God.

¹¹And to him they had regard, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries.

MATTHEW 10:

³²Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven.

³³But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

³⁴Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.

³⁵For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

³⁶And a man's foes shall be of his own household.

MATTHEW 24:

¹⁵...stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:)

²¹For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.

²²And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.

REVELATION 12:

¹⁷And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed,

LET MY PEOPLE GO

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

4TH WITNESS

“And Israel saw that great work which the LORD did upon the Egyptians: and the people feared the LORD, and believed the LORD...” Exodus 14:31

ACTS 8:

¹²But when they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.

¹³Then Simon himself believed also: and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and signs which were done.

¹⁴Now when the apostles which were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John:

¹⁵Who, when they were come down, prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Ghost:

¹⁶(For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: only they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.)

¹⁷Then laid they *their* hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost.

¹⁸And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Ghost was given, he offered them money,

¹⁹Saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the Holy Ghost.

²⁰But Peter said unto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money.

MATTHEW 10:

³⁷He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me.

³⁸And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.

MATTHEW 24:

¹³But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.
(*This verse intentionally out of sequence for illustration.*)

REVELATION 12:

¹⁷...which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER 6

RICH MAN POOR MAN

What is the definition of being “rich”? In worldly terms, some people believe that if you have enough money so that you do not have to work, then you are rich. Conversely, if you do not have enough money to eat regularly, then some people believe that is the definition of being poor. So, physical wealth is the state of having an abundance of finances, in order to do what you want to do. Another way to say it is “financial independence” so that you do not have to depend upon anybody. What does the Bible say about being rich?

“I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth. Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked.” Revelation 3:15-17

So, the Bible says that to be only physically rich is to be spiritually poor. In that case, what does the Bible say to do?

“I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and *that* the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see.” Revelation 3:18

“That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honour and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ:” 1 Peter 1:7

The gold tried in the fire is the trial of our faith! We are to walk the walk and to believe what God has said in His word and to believe what He has put on our heart concerning our daily service to Him. Faith requires us to make a decision and to act upon the decision to show that we believe His Word.

“By faith Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh’s daughter; Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season; Esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect unto the recompense of the reward.” Hebrews 11:24-26

Moses had received a major revelation from the Lord: that spiritual riches are greater than physical riches! This liberated him from the bondage of dependence on the physical world. He could depend on God to supply his needs and thus, be free to serve the Lord. In the end, he knew he would receive an eternal reward.

Part of a Christian’s growth is to transition from the pursuit of physical wealth (money) to the pursuit of spiritual wealth (faith). The majority of Christians have a daily job in order to earn a living for their family and this is perfectly fine. The problem arises when the job tries to get in the way of God’s calling for the individual. He cannot serve two masters. He cannot choose to work overtime because of the extra money and, as a result, decide to put off the prison outreach trip that he signed up for with his church. To not do what God has put on his heart is called unbelief. When a Christian continues in unbelief they cannot expect to inherit eternal life (Rev. 21:8).

In our daily walk, God says to love and forgive. God says to help the poor. God says to be salt and light. God says not to sin. We will be challenged daily to demonstrate that we believe. So, let us practice believing every day and let us also ask the Lord for His continued help with our daily walk.

One clarification: it is not a sin to be rich with a lot of physical treasure. Abraham, Lot, Joseph, Solomon, and David were rich. But, it is a sin to make money into a god and to treat people differently because they are rich or poor. Study the following Bible pattern with Luke 16 and James 2. It is far better to be spiritually rich and not to trust in uncertain physical riches.

CHAPTER 6

RICH MAN POOR MAN

“And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles’ hands the Holy Ghost was given, he offered them money, Saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the Holy Ghost. But Peter said unto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money.” Acts 8:18-20

As illustrated by this verse from the book of Acts, it is impossible to exchange physical wealth for spiritual wealth. It is time to fully submit to the Lord now in order to build up our spiritual bank account. As we become spiritually rich, God expects us to give it out. Then, we can see miracles.

“And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give.” Matthew 10:7-8

The deeper understanding of the Bible pattern between Luke 16 and James 2 is that the rich man is a type for a spiritually-rich church, full of the Word of God; yet, the church is not ministering to the spiritual needs of the common people outside of the church’s walls. Even the Gentile “dogs”, who are supposedly without the knowledge of the Word of God, are ministering charity to the unloved poor. It is a variation of the parable of the good Samaritan.

There was once a true story of a visiting pastor who went to a protestant church where he was scheduled to be a guest speaker. Before church began, he was on the outside step of the church dressed as a homeless man. A significant number of the people entering the church avoided the “homeless” man. His identity was kept hidden until the time when he was introduced to speak. When he stepped forward and the people saw who it was, there was an audible gasp from the congregation. Guess what his sermon was about?

RICH MAN POOR MAN

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 16:

¹⁹There was a certain rich man,

(A Pharisee-type Christian religious leader...)

...which was clothed in purple and fine linen,
and fared sumptuously every day:

(...with abundant access to the Word of God while
withholding from needy sheep.)

(“But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for
ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither
go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to
go in.” Matt. 23:13)

²⁰And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus,
which was laid at his gate, full of sores,

(At the gate = the visitation of the Lord)
(Sores = needs)

²¹And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from
the rich man’s table: moreover the dogs came and
licked his sores.

(Crumbs = the basics of the Word)
(Dogs = Samaritan-type unbelievers)

²²And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and

...was carried by the angels into Abraham’s bosom:

...the rich man also died, and was buried;

(The dirt on the rich man’s grave = the dirt of unbelief.)
(Unbelief prevents any possibility of resurrection.)

²³And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and
seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.

²⁴And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy
on me,

...and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his
finger in water, and cool my tongue;

2ND WITNESS

JAMES 2:

¹My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus
Christ, *the Lord* of glory, with respect of persons.

²For if there come unto your assembly
...a man with a gold ring,

...in goodly apparel,

(“But all their works they do for to be seen of men: they make
broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders
of their garments,” Matt. 23:5)

...and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment;

³And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay
clothing, and say unto him,

...Sit thou here in a good place; and say to the poor,
Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool:

(Country club-type churches exclusion of “street” people.)

⁴Are ye not then partial in yourselves, and are become
judges of evil thoughts?

⁵Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen
the poor of this world rich in faith,

...and heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to
them that love him?

⁶But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men
oppress you,

⁶...and draw you before the judgment seats?

⁷Do not they blaspheme that worthy name by the
which ye are called?

⁸If ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture,
Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well:

RICH MAN POOR MAN

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 16:

²⁴...for I am tormented in this flame.

²⁵But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

²⁶And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that *would come* from thence.

²⁷Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house:

²⁸For I have five brethren;

...that he may testify unto them,

...lest they also come into this place of torment.

²⁹Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them.

³⁰And he said, Nay,

...father Abraham...

2ND WITNESS

JAMES 2:

⁹But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors.

¹⁰For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one *point*, he is guilty of all.

¹¹For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law.

¹²So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty.

¹³For he shall have judgment without mercy, that hath showed no mercy;

↑
(the "Great Gulf")

↓
...and mercy rejoiceth against judgment.

¹⁴What doth it profit,

...my brethren,

...though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him?

¹⁵If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food,

¹⁶And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what *doth it* profit?

¹⁷Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone.

¹⁸Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: show me thy faith without thy works, and I will show thee my faith by my works.

¹⁹Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble.

²⁰But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?

²¹Was not Abraham our father...

RICH MAN POOR MAN

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 16:

³⁰ ...but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent.

³¹ And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.

("Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples, Saying, The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat: All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not." Matt. 23:1-3)

2ND WITNESS

JAMES 2:

²¹ ...justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar?

²² Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect?

²³ And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God.

²⁴ Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only.

²⁵ Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent *them* out another way?

²⁶ For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

("For I was an hungered, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee? Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me. And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal." Matt. 25:42-46)

CHAPTER 7

THE TWO TEMPTATIONS

From this pattern we see that Jesus endured two major periods of temptation in His life, at the beginning of and at the end of His ministry. This is a warning to the rest of us; that we may have to go through the same thing in our ministry.

*“The disciple is not above *his* master, nor the servant above his lord.”* Matthew 10:24

The first temptation of Jesus took place in the wilderness following His baptism. After fasting for 40 days/nights Jesus was tempted with three things that the devil said.

In the second temptation while Jesus was on the cross, the devil used people to say the same three things to Jesus that the devil said when he tempted Jesus in the wilderness. Some of the people that the devil used to tempt Jesus with were the chief priests. Religious people are dangerous. Spiritual people who are led by the Holy Spirit are not dangerous.

*“For to be carnally minded *is* death; but to be spiritually minded *is* life and peace.”*

“For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.”

Romans 8:6, 13-14

The pattern of temptation used by the devil remains consistent with the pattern discussed in Chapter 3, of the first volume of The Two Witnesses, which is “the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life.”

Let us endeavor to use words that Jesus would say and not to use words that the devil would say.

*“Let your speech *be* always with grace, seasoned with salt, that ye may know how ye ought to answer every man.”*

Colossians 4:6

THE TWO TEMPTATIONS

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

³⁴They gave him vinegar to drink mingled with gall:
...and when he had tasted *thereof*, he would not drink.

³⁹And they that passed by reviled him, wagging their heads,
⁴⁰...save thyself. If thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross.

⁴¹Likewise also the chief priests mocking *him*...
⁴²...If he be the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe him.

(Selected verses omitted for brevity.)

2ND WITNESS

MARK 15:

²³And they gave him to drink wine mingled with myrrh:
...but he received *it* not.*

²⁹And they that passed by railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying...
³⁰Save thyself, and come down from the cross.

³¹Likewise also the chief priests mocking...
³²Let Christ the King of Israel descend now from the cross, that we may see and believe.

*Luke 22:18 - **For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.**

3RD WITNESS

MATTHEW 4:

¹Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil.

²And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungered.

³And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.

⁴But he answered and said, **It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.**

⁵Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple,

⁶And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee: and in *their* hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

⁷Jesus said unto him, **It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.**

⁸Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and showeth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them;

⁹And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.

¹⁰Then saith Jesus unto him, **Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.**

¹¹Then the devil leaveth him**, and, behold, angels came and ministered unto him.

**Luke 4:13 - And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season.

CHAPTER 8

ISAIAH 61 - LUKE 4 - MATTHEW 5

It is important to study this pattern in order to understand the anointing of Jesus. He came to set the captives free and to bless people. For this, He was persecuted and eventually crucified. The reason is because the devil is the god of this world (2 Cor. 4:4) and wants people to remain in bondage and not to be free. The devil uses religious people to persecute the godly people. This is quite tragic; to be used by the devil for his purposes. It is better to follow Jesus than to be religious.

From the pattern, we see that when Jesus “dropped the bomb” on the Pharisees by saying that the scripture from Isaiah 61 was fulfilled, He was also trying to warn the religious leaders that He was not there to destroy the law or the prophets but to fulfill. The astounding thing is that the Pharisees rejected fulfillment of Bible prophecy. Would not the keepers of the law want Bible prophecy to be fulfilled? But they rejected Jesus as the fulfillment of the prophecy because they judged Him after the flesh. The kingdom of God came suddenly upon the Pharisees and they were not prepared. They rejected the one whom God had sent. Now, they burn in everlasting torment. When someone comes to us in the name of the Lord, no matter how “un-anointed” they look, let us judge after the spirit and not after the flesh. If they have the fruit of the Spirit (Gal. 5:22-23), we need to consider their message.

The pattern gives us a peek at the rewards for being persecuted for the name of Jesus. These are everlasting rewards. They will be more than worth it, so let us remain faithful.

ISAIAH 61 - LUKE 4 - MATTHEW 5

1ST WITNESS

ISAIAH 61:

¹The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to *them that are bound*; ²To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; ³To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning,

...the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified.

⁴And they shall build the old wastes, they shall raise up the former desolations, and they shall repair the waste cities, the desolations of many generations.

⁵And strangers shall stand and feed your flocks, and the sons of the alien *shall be* your plowmen and your vinedressers.

⁶But ye shall be named the Priests of the LORD: *men* shall call you the Ministers of our God: ye shall eat the riches of the Gentiles, and in their glory shall ye boast yourselves.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 4:

¹⁷And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written, ¹⁸The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; ...he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, ...to preach deliverance to the captives,

...and recovering of sight to the blind,

...to set at liberty them that are bruised,

¹⁹To preach the acceptable year of the Lord.

²⁰And he closed the book, and he gave *it* again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him.

(Read between the lines →)

²¹And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears.

3RD WITNESS

MATTHEW 5:

¹And seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain: and when he was set, his disciples came unto him:

²And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying,

³Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

⁴Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.

⁵Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

⁶Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled.

⁷Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.

⁸Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.

⁹Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God.

¹⁰Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

¹¹Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake.

¹²Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

(v. 13-16 omitted for brevity)

¹⁷Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil.

¹⁸For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.

CHAPTER 9

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

This chapter is one of those rare, extended-length patterns revealed by the Lord, and it took a significant amount of time to study. The only other pattern *so far* of equal or greater complexity is the chapter of Daniel 11 in the first volume of The Two Witnesses. Glory to God for He is awesome!

The Infinity Bible Code reveals that the Old Testament book 1st Samuel and New Testament chapter John 6 correspond mathematically:

John 6	= 74 th chapter of New Testament
No. of Books in the Bible	= 66

difference	= 8 (1 Samuel is 8 th book of OT and 74 th book of the Bible)

When studying the pattern match-up between 1 Samuel and John 6, it becomes apparent that faith in God is extremely important if miracles are to happen. First, one must consult with the Lord what should be done about a situation. This requires the ability to hear the Lord's voice when He speaks to our heart.

“While it is said, To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the provocation.”
Hebrews 3:15

When He puts it on our heart what we are to do about the Philistine or what we are to do about the five thousand hungry people, then we are equipped with His answer. When given the answer to a problem, the next step that is required is ACTION. When we believe the answer we have received is from God and we act in faith on that belief, then the miracle can take place. We turn the faucet handle because we believe the water will come out. We flip the switch because we believe the light will come on. We demonstrate faith every day in the physical world. It is time to demonstrate faith in the spiritual world and believe God's Word! Now is the time to practice our faith. Others are depending upon it, in order for their faith to increase. After David slew Goliath, then the army of Israel pursued after the Philistines and achieved victory. After Jesus distributed the loaves and fishes to His disciples, then the food multiplied further when the disciples distributed it to the people.

The five smooth stones that David put in his bag represent the five-fold ministry of Ephesians 4:11. The single stone that he chose to slay Goliath with was the prophetic word. Goliath attempted to dictate the terms and conditions of the battle: “Come to me, and I will give thy flesh unto the fowls of the air...” David responded with the prophetic word: “This day will the LORD deliver thee into mine hand; and I will smite thee...” With the prophetic word from the Lord, David put Goliath into a spiritual “box” and the battle was over. All that was left for David to do was to go through the motions and defeat Goliath because it had already happened in the spirit world. David's act of faith in 1.) believing that he had heard an answer from the Lord, 2.) prophesying the ordained result of the battle, and 3.) carrying out the action, resulted in a great victory. The devil hates the prophetic word and, sad to say, the average church is strangely silent in the gift of prophesying or in the voice of the prophet.

Even though Goliath was twice as large as David was physically, David perceived spiritually that he was much larger than Goliath and the battle was a mismatch. The Lord helped David to see the spiritual reality of the situation. In our daily battles, we fight only those battles that the Lord ordains. When the Lord identifies the enemy that He has given into our hand, then all we have to do is to go through the motion and win the battle, by faith. We fight with the Word of God and we have the victory through Jesus Christ our Lord because He has already defeated the devil.

The pattern of David-versus-Goliath shall repeat again in the last days. The devil is raising up a technological, big brother-type of Goliath while the Lord is raising up a spiritual David to defeat Goliath. The army of Israel that hesitated to engage Goliath in battle is symbolic of religious leaders that knuckle under to the One World Government beast. God has to raise up young, anointed ones to take the

CHAPTER 9

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

leadership positions of faith in order to achieve victory for the Lord's name sake. It will happen. Let us submit today and allow God to grow our faith!

A few notes of clarification for the reader are necessary. The following Bible pattern consists of three sections:

Section 1 - the first five pages of the pattern contain a two-column format (1st and 2nd witness).

Section 2 - the next thirteen pages have a four-column format due to the complexity of the pattern.

Section 3 - the final three pages revert back to two-column format.

In Section 2, the reader will notice that certain verses from John 6 are enclosed in boxes. The verses immediately under the box, across all four columns, correspond to the verse enclosed in the box. This means a total of five witnesses and the format was used in order to avoid five columns. Take time to study the pattern carefully so that additional revelation may come forth from the Lord.

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 17:

¹²Now David was the son of that Ephrathite of Bethlehemjudah, whose name was Jesse; and he had eight sons: and the man went among men for an old man in the days of Saul.

¹³And the three eldest sons of Jesse went and followed Saul to the battle: and the names of his three sons that went to the battle were Eliab the firstborn, and next unto him Abinadab, and the third Shammah.

¹⁴And David was the youngest: and the three eldest followed Saul.

¹⁵But David went and returned from Saul ...to feed his father's sheep at Bethlehem.

¹⁶And the Philistine drew near morning and evening, and presented himself forty days.

¹⁷And Jesse said unto David his son, Take now for thy brethren an ephah of this parched corn, and these ten loaves,

...and run to the camp to thy brethren;

¹⁸And carry these ten cheeses unto the captain of their thousand, and look how thy brethren fare, and take their pledge.

¹⁹Now Saul, and they, and all the men of Israel, were in the valley of Elah, fighting with the Philistines.

²⁰And David rose up early in the morning, and left the sheep with a keeper, and took, and went, as Jesse had commanded him; and he came to the trench, as the host was going forth to the fight, and shouted for the battle.

²¹For Israel and the Philistines had put the battle in array, army against army.

²²And David left his carriage in the hand of the keeper of the carriage, and ran into the army, and came and saluted his brethren.

²³And as he talked with them, behold, there came up the champion, the Philistine of Gath, Goliath by name, out of the armies of the Philistines, and spake according to the same words: and David heard them.

²⁴And all the men of Israel, when they saw the man, fled from him, and were sore afraid.

²⁵And the men of Israel said, Have ye seen this man that is come up? surely to defy Israel is he come up: and it shall be, that the man who killeth him, the king will enrich him with great riches, and will give him his daughter, and make his father's house free in Israel.

²⁶And David spake to the men that stood by him, saying, What shall be done to the man that killeth this Philistine, and taketh away the reproach from Israel? for who is this uncircumcised Philistine, that he should defy the armies of the living God?

²⁷And the people answered him after this manner, saying, So shall it be done to the man that killeth him.

JOHN 6:

¹After these things Jesus went over the sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tiberias.

²And a great multitude followed him, because they saw his miracles which he did on them that were diseased.

³And Jesus went up into a mountain, and there he sat with his disciples.

⁴And the passover, a feast of

...the Jews, was nigh.

⁵When Jesus then lifted up his eyes, and saw a great company come unto him,

...he saith unto Philip,

...Whence shall we buy bread, that these may eat?

⁶And this he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do.

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 17:

²⁸And Eliab his eldest brother heard when he spake unto the men; and Eliab's anger was kindled against David, and he said, Why camest thou down hither? and with whom hast thou left those few sheep in the wilderness? I know thy pride, and the naughtiness of thine heart; for thou art come down that thou mightest see the battle.

²⁹And David said, What have I now done? *Is there* not a cause?

³⁰And he turned from him toward another, and spake after the same manner: and the people answered him again after the former manner.

³²And David said to Saul, Let no man's heart fail because of him; thy servant will go and fight with this Philistine.

³³And Saul said to David, Thou art not able to go against this Philistine to fight with him: for thou art but a youth, and he a man of war from his youth.

³⁴And David said unto Saul, Thy servant kept his father's sheep, and there came a lion, and a bear, and took a lamb out of the flock:

³⁵And I went out after him, and smote him, and delivered *it* out of his mouth: and when he arose against me, I caught *him* by his beard, and smote him, and slew him.

³⁶Thy servant slew both the lion and the bear: and this uncircumcised Philistine shall be as one of them, seeing he hath defied the armies of the living God.

³⁷David said moreover, The LORD that delivered me out of the paw of the lion, and out of the paw of the bear, he will deliver me out of the hand of this Philistine. And Saul said unto David, Go, and the LORD be with thee.

³⁸And Saul armed David with his armour, and he put an helmet of brass upon his head; also he armed him with a coat of mail.

³⁹And David girded his sword upon his armour, and he assayed to go; for he had not proved *it*. And David said unto Saul, I cannot go with these; for I have not proved *them*. And David put them off him.

JOHN 6:

⁷Philip answered him, Two hundred pennyworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little.

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 17:

³¹And when the words were heard which David spake, they rehearsed *them* before Saul: and he sent for him.

(↑ *This verse out of sequence for illustration clarity.*)

⁴⁰And he took his staff in his hand, and chose him ...five smooth stones out of the brook, and put them in a shepherd's bag which he had, even in a scrip; and his sling was in his hand: and he drew near to the Philistine.

(*Stones = Word of God, Brook = Living Waters*)

⁴¹And the Philistine came on and drew near unto David; and the man that bare the shield *went* before him.

⁴²And when the Philistine looked about, and saw David, he disdained him: for he was *but* a youth, and ruddy, and of a fair countenance.

⁴³And the Philistine said unto David, *Am* I a dog, that thou comest to me with staves? And the Philistine cursed David by his gods.

⁴⁴And the Philistine said to David, Come to me, and I will give thy flesh unto the fowls of the air, and to the beasts of the field.

⁴⁵Then said David to the Philistine, Thou comest to me with a sword, and with a spear, and with a shield: but I come to thee in the name of the LORD of hosts, the God of the armies of Israel, whom thou hast defied.

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 6:

⁸One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him,

⁹There is a lad here,

...which hath five barley loaves, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many?

(*Five = Fivefold Ministry: "And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ:" Eph. 4:11-13*)
(*Two = Strength of Two Witnesses*)

¹⁰And Jesus said, **Make the men sit down.** Now there was much grass in the place. So the men sat down, in number about five thousand.

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 17:

⁴⁶This day will the LORD deliver thee into mine hand; and I will smite thee, and take thine head from thee; and I will give the carcases of the host of the Philistines this day unto the fowls of the air, and to the wild beasts of the earth; that all the earth may know that there is a God in Israel.

⁴⁷And all this assembly shall know that the LORD saveth not with sword and spear: for the battle *is* the LORD'S, and he will give you into our hands.

⁴⁸And it came to pass, when the Philistine arose, and came and drew nigh to meet David, that David hasted, and ran toward the army to meet the Philistine.

⁴⁹And David put his hand in his bag, and ...took thence a stone, and slang *it*, and smote the Philistine in his forehead, that the stone sunk into his forehead; and he fell upon his face to the earth.

⁵⁰So David prevailed over the Philistine with a sling and with a stone, and smote the Philistine, and slew him; but *there was* no sword in the hand of David.

⁵¹Therefore David ran, and stood upon the Philistine, and took his sword, and drew it out of the sheath thereof, and slew him, and cut off his head therewith. And when the Philistines saw their champion was dead, they fled.

⁵²And the men of Israel and of Judah arose, and shouted, and pursued the Philistines, until thou come to the valley, and to the gates of Ekron. And the wounded of the Philistines fell down by the way to Shaaraim, even unto Gath, and unto Ekron.

⁵³And the children of Israel returned from chasing after the Philistines, and they spoiled their tents.

⁵⁴And David took the head of the Philistine, and brought it to Jerusalem; but he put his armour in his tent.

(*"twelve baskets" = Twelve Tribes of Israel*) →

⁵⁵And when Saul saw David go forth against the Philistine, he said unto Abner, the captain of the host, Abner, whose son *is* this youth? And Abner said, As thy soul liveth, O king, I cannot tell.

⁵⁶And the king said, inquire thou whose son the stripling *is*.

⁵⁷And as David returned from the slaughter of the Philistine, Abner took him, and brought him before Saul with the head of the Philistine in his hand.

⁵⁸And Saul said to him, Whose son *art* thou, *thou* young man? And David answered, I *am* the son of thy servant Jesse the Bethlehemite.

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 6:

(*Prophetic Word = Proclamation of Faith*)

¹¹And Jesus took the loaves; and when he had given thanks, (*Prayer of Faith*)

...he distributed to the disciples,

(*Faith was distributed: "...and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith." 1 John 5:4b*)

...and the disciples to them that were set down; and likewise of the fishes as much as they would.

(↑ *Multiplication of faith.*)

¹²When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.

¹³Therefore they gathered *them* together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley loaves, which remained over and above unto them that had eaten.

¹⁴Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said,

...This is of a truth that prophet that should come into the world.

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 18:

¹And it came to pass, when he had made an end of speaking unto Saul, that the soul of Jonathan was knit with the soul of David, and Jonathan loved him as his own soul.

²And Saul took him that day, and would let him go no more home to his father's house.

³Then Jonathan and David made a covenant, because he loved him as his own soul.

⁴And Jonathan stripped himself of the robe that was upon him, and gave it to David, and his garments, even to his sword, and to his bow, and to his girdle.

⁵And David went out whithersoever Saul sent him, and behaved himself wisely: and Saul set him over the men of war, and he was accepted in the sight of all the people, and also in the sight of Saul's servants.

⁶And it came to pass as they came, when David was returned from the slaughter of the Philistine, that the women came out of all cities of Israel, singing and dancing, to meet king Saul, with tabrets, with joy, and with instruments of music.

⁷And the women answered *one another* as they played, and said, Saul hath slain his thousands, and David his ten thousands.

⁸And Saul was very wroth, and the saying displeased him; and he said, They have ascribed unto David ten thousands, and to me they have ascribed *but* thousands: and what can he have more but the kingdom?

JOHN 6:

¹⁵When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come and take him by force, to make him a king,

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 18:

⁹And Saul eyed David from that day and forward.

¹⁰And it came to pass on the morrow, that the evil spirit from God came upon Saul,

...and he prophesied in the midst of the house:

...and David played with his hand, as at other times: and *there was a javelin* in Saul's hand.

¹¹And Saul cast the javelin; for he said, I will smite David even to the wall *with it.*

...And David avoided out of his presence twice.

¹²And Saul was afraid of David, because the LORD was with him, and was departed from Saul.

2ND WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 19:

¹And Saul spake to Jonathan his son, and to all his servants,

that they should kill David.

²But Jonathan Saul's son delighted much in David: and Jonathan told David, saying, Saul my father seeketh to kill thee: now therefore, I pray thee, take heed to thyself until the morning, and abide in a secret place, and hide thyself:

³And I will go out...

3RD WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 19:

⁹And the evil spirit from the LORD was upon Saul,

...as he sat in his house

...with his javelin in his hand: and David played with his hand.

¹⁰And Saul sought to smite David even to the wall with the javelin;

...but he slipped away out of Saul's presence, and he smote the javelin into the wall: and David fled, and escaped that night.

¹¹Saul also sent messengers unto David's house, to watch him, and to slay him in the morning: and Michal David's wife told him, saying, If thou save not thy life to night, to morrow thou shalt be slain.

¹²So Michal let David down through a window: and he went, and fled, and escaped.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 6:

¹⁵...he departed again into a mountain himself alone.

¹⁶And when even was *now* come, his disciples went down unto the sea,

¹⁷And entered into a ship, and went over the sea toward Capernaum.

...And it was now dark, and Jesus was not come to them.

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 18:

¹³Therefore Saul removed him from him, and made him his captain over a thousand; and he went out and came in before the people.

¹⁴And David behaved himself wisely in all his ways; and the LORD *was* with him.

¹⁵Wherefore when Saul saw that he behaved himself very wisely, he was afraid of him.

¹⁶But all Israel and Judah loved David, because he went out and came in before them.

¹⁷And Saul said to David, Behold my elder daughter Merab, her will I give thee to wife: only be thou valiant for me, and fight the LORD'S battles. For Saul said, Let not mine hand be upon him, but let the hand of the Philistines be upon him.

¹⁸And David said unto Saul, Who *am* I? and what *is* my life, or my father's family in Israel, that I should be son in law to the king?

¹⁹But it came to pass at the time when Merab Saul's daughter should have been given to David, that she was given unto Adriel the Meholathite to wife.

2ND WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 19:

3RD WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 19:

¹³And Michal took an image, and laid *it* in the bed, and put a pillow of goats' *hair* for his bolster, and covered *it* with a cloth.

¹⁴And when Saul sent messengers to take David, she said, He *is* sick.

¹⁵And Saul sent the messengers *again* to see David, saying, Bring him up to me in the bed, that I may slay him.

¹⁶And when the messengers were come in, behold, there was an image in the bed, with a pillow of goats' *hair* for his bolster.

¹⁷And Saul said unto Michal, Why hast thou deceived me so, and sent away mine enemy, that he is escaped? And Michal answered Saul, He said unto me, Let me go; why should I kill thee?

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 6:

¹⁸And the sea arose by reason of a great wind that blew.

¹⁹So when they had rowed about five and twenty or thirty furlongs, they see Jesus* walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship: and they were afraid.

²⁰But he saith unto them, **It is I; be not afraid.**

(**"And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit; and they cried out for fear."* Matt. 14:26)

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 18:

²⁰And Michal Saul's daughter loved David: and they told Saul, and the thing pleased him.

²¹And Saul said, I will give him her, that she may be a snare to him, and that the hand of the Philistines may be against him. Wherefore Saul said to David, Thou shalt this day be my son in law in *the one of* the twain.

²²And Saul commanded his servants, saying, Commune with David secretly, and say, Behold, the king hath delight in thee, and all his servants love thee: now therefore be the king's son in law.

²³And Saul's servants spake those words in the ears of David. And David said, Seemeth it to you *a light thing* to be a king's son in law, seeing that I *am* a poor man, and lightly esteemed?

²⁴And the servants of Saul told him, saying, On this manner spake David.

²⁵And Saul said, Thus shall ye say to David, The king desireth not any dowry, but an hundred foreskins of the Philistines, to be avenged of the king's enemies. But Saul thought to make David fall by the hand of the Philistines.

²⁶And when his servants told David these words, it pleased David well to be the king's son in law: and the days were not expired.

2ND WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 19:

³...and stand beside my father in the field where thou *art*, and I will commune with my father of thee; and what I see, that I will tell thee.

⁴And Jonathan spake good of David unto Saul his father, and said unto him, Let not the king sin against his servant, against David; because he hath not sinned against thee, and because his works *have been* to thee-ward very good:

3RD WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 19:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 6:

²¹Then they willingly received him into the ship: and immediately the ship was at the land whither they went.

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 18:

²⁷Wherefore David arose and went, he and his men, and slew of the Philistines two hundred men; and

... David brought their foreskins, and they gave them in full tale to the king, that he might be the king's son in law. And Saul gave him Michal his daughter to wife.

²⁸And Saul saw and knew that the LORD *was* with David, and *that* Michal Saul's daughter loved him.

²⁹And Saul was yet the more afraid of David; and Saul became David's enemy continually.

³⁰Then the princes of the Philistines went forth: and it came to pass, after they went forth, *that* David behaved himself more wisely than all the servants of Saul; so that his name was much set by.

2ND WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 19:

⁵For he did put his life in his hand, and slew the Philistine, and the LORD wrought a great salvation for all Israel: thou sawest *it*, and didst rejoice: wherefore then wilt thou sin against innocent blood, to slay David without a cause?

⁶And Saul hearkened unto the voice of Jonathan: and Saul sware, As the LORD liveth, he shall not be slain.

⁷And Jonathan called David, and Jonathan showed him all those things. And Jonathan brought David to Saul, and he was in his presence, as in times past.

⁸And there was war again: and David went out, and fought with the Philistines, and slew them with a great slaughter; and they fled from him.

3RD WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 19:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 6:

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

4TH WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 19:

1 SAMUEL 19:

JOHN 6:

²²The day following, when the people which stood on the other side of the sea saw that there was none other boat there, save that one whereinto his disciples were entered, and that Jesus went not with his disciples into the boat, but *that* his disciples were gone away alone;

²³(Howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias nigh unto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had given thanks:)

²⁴When the people therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples,

...they also took shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Jesus.

1 SAMUEL 19:

¹⁸So David fled, and escaped, and came to Samuel to Ramah, and told him all that Saul had done to him. And he and Samuel went and dwelt in Naioth.

¹⁹And it was told Saul, saying, Behold, David is at Naioth in Ramah.

²⁰And Saul sent messengers to take David: and when they saw the company of the prophets prophesying, and Samuel standing as appointed over them, the Spirit of God was upon the messengers of Saul, and they also prophesied.

²¹And when it was told Saul, he sent other messengers, and they prophesied likewise. And Saul sent messengers again the third time, and they prophesied also.

²²Then went he also to Ramah, and came to a great well that *is* in Sechu: and he asked and said, Where are Samuel and David? And *one* said, Behold, *they be* at Naioth in Ramah.

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 19:

²³And he went thither to Naioth in Ramah: and the Spirit of God was upon him also, and he went on, and prophesied, until he came to Naioth in Ramah.

²⁴And he stripped off his clothes also, and prophesied before Samuel in like manner, and lay down naked all that day and all that night. Wherefore they say, *Is Saul also among the prophets?*

1 SAMUEL 20:

¹And David fled from Naioth in Ramah, and came and said before Jonathan, What have I done? what *is* mine iniquity? and what *is* my sin before thy father, that he seeketh my life?

²And he said unto him, God forbid; thou shalt not die: behold, my father will do nothing either great or small, but that he will show it me: and why should my father hide this thing from me? *it is not so.*

³And David sware moreover, and said, Thy father certainly knoweth that I have found grace in thine eyes; and he saith, Let not Jonathan know this, lest he be grieved: but truly as the LORD liveth, and as thy soul liveth, *there is* but a step between me and death.

⁴Then said Jonathan unto David, Whatsoever thy soul desireth, I will even do *it* for thee.

2ND WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 20:

(← *Saul is not convinced that God has raised up David to be his successor.*)

3RD WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 20:

(*The people are not convinced that → God has raised up Jesus to be their Lord & Savior.*)

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 6:

²⁵And when they had found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither?

²⁶Jesus answered them and said, **Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled.**

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

4TH WITNESS

“Labour not for the meat which perisheth...” John 6:27a

1 SAMUEL 20:

⁵And David said unto Jonathan,
Behold, to morrow is the new moon,
and I should not fail to sit with the king
at meat:

(←Rosh Hashanah)

(←“*Blessed are those servants, whom the lord when he cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them.*” Luke 12:37)

1 SAMUEL 20:

¹⁸Then Jonathan said to David, To morrow is the new moon:

1 SAMUEL 20:

²⁴So David hid himself in the field: and when the new moon was come, the king sat him down to eat meat.

“...but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed.” John 6:27b

...but let me go, that I may hide myself in the field

1 SAMUEL 20:

¹¹And Jonathan said unto David, Come, and let us go out into the field. And they went out both of them into the field.

(“*Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left.*” Matthew 24:40)

...unto the third day at even.

(“*And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day.*” Luke 24:46)

¹²And Jonathan said unto David, O LORD God of Israel, when I have sounded my father about to morrow any time, or the third day,

(“...*that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.*” John 3:16b)

...and thou shalt be missed, because thy seat will be empty.

(“*And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre. And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus.*” Luke 24:2-3)

¹⁹And when thou hast stayed three days, then thou shalt go down quickly, and come to the place where thou didst hide thyself when the business was *in hand*,

1 SAMUEL 20:

²⁵And the king sat upon his seat, as at other times, *even* upon a seat by the wall: and Jonathan arose, and Abner sat by Saul's side,

...and David's place was empty.
²⁶Nevertheless Saul spake not any thing that day: for he thought, Something hath befallen him, he is not clean; surely he is not clean.

²⁷And it came to pass on the morrow, *which* was the second day of the month, that David's place was empty: and Saul said unto Jonathan his son, Wherefore cometh not the son of Jesse to meat, neither yesterday, nor to day?

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

4TH WITNESS

“Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God?” John 6:28

1 SAMUEL 20:

⁶If thy father at all miss me, then say, David earnestly asked leave of me that he might run to Bethlehem his city:

...for there is a yearly sacrifice there for all the family.

⁷If he say thus, *It is well*; thy servant shall have peace: but if he be very wroth, *then* be sure that evil is determined by him.

1 SAMUEL 20:

¹²...and, behold, *if there be good* toward David, and I then send not unto thee, and show it thee;

¹³The LORD do so and much more to Jonathan:

...but if it please my father to do thee evil, then I will show it thee, and send thee away, that thou mayest go in peace: and the LORD be with thee, as he hath been with my father.

1 SAMUEL 20:

¹⁹...and shalt remain by the stone Ezel.
(*Ezel = Strong's 237, from the word meaning "departure".*)

(*"But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance again made of sins every year. For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins."* Hebrews 10:3-4)

(*For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries."* Hebrews 10:26-27)

1 SAMUEL 20:

²⁸And Jonathan answered Saul, David earnestly asked leave of me to go to Bethlehem:
²⁹And he said, Let me go, I pray thee; for our family hath a sacrifice in the city; and my brother, he hath commanded me to be there: and now, if I have found favour in thine eyes, let me get away, I pray thee, and see my brethren. Therefore he cometh not unto the king's table.

³⁰Then Saul's anger was kindled against Jonathan, and he said unto him, Thou son of the perverse rebellious *woman*, do not I know that thou hast chosen the son of Jesse to thine own confusion, and unto the confusion of thy mother's nakedness?

³¹For as long as the son of Jesse liveth upon the ground, thou shalt not be established, nor thy kingdom. Wherefore now send and fetch him unto me, for he shall surely die.

³²And Jonathan answered Saul his father, and said unto him, Wherefore shall he be slain? what hath he done?

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 20:

2ND WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 20:

3RD WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 20:

²⁰And I will shoot three arrows on the side *thereof*, as though I shot at a mark.

²¹And, behold, I will send a lad, saying, Go, find out the arrows. If I expressly say unto the lad, Behold, the arrows *are* on this side of thee, take them; then come thou: for *there is* peace to thee, and no hurt; as the LORD liveth.

²²But if I say thus unto the young man, Behold, the arrows *are* beyond thee; go thy way: for the LORD hath sent thee away.

4TH WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 20:

³³And Saul cast a javelin at him to smite him: whereby Jonathan knew that it was determined of his father to slay David.

³⁴So Jonathan arose from the table in fierce anger, and did eat no meat the second day of the month: for he was grieved for David, because his father had done him shame.

³⁵And it came to pass in the morning, that Jonathan went out into the field at the time appointed with David, and a little lad with him.

³⁶And he said unto his lad, Run, find out now the arrows which I shoot. *And* as the lad ran, he shot an arrow beyond him.

³⁷And when the lad was come to the place of the arrow which Jonathan had shot, Jonathan cried after the lad, and said, *Is* not the arrow beyond thee?

³⁸And Jonathan cried after the lad, Make speed, haste, stay not. And Jonathan's lad gathered up the arrows, and came to his master.

³⁹But the lad knew not any thing: only Jonathan and David knew the matter.

⁴⁰And Jonathan gave his artillery unto his lad, and said unto him, Go, carry *them* to the city.

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

4TH WITNESS

“Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.” John 6:29

1 SAMUEL 20:

⁸Therefore thou shalt deal kindly with thy servant; for thou hast brought thy servant into a covenant of the LORD with thee: notwithstanding, if there be in me iniquity, slay me thyself; for why shouldest thou bring me to thy father?

⁹And Jonathan said, Far be it from thee: for if I knew certainly that evil were determined by my father to come upon thee, then would not I tell it thee?

1 SAMUEL 20:

¹⁴And thou shalt not only while yet I live show me the kindness of the LORD, that I die not:

¹⁵But *also* thou shalt not cut off thy kindness from my house for ever: no, not when the LORD hath cut off the enemies of David every one from the face of the earth.

¹⁶So Jonathan made a covenant with the house of David, saying, Let the LORD even require *it* at the hand of David's enemies.

¹⁷And Jonathan caused David to swear again, because he loved him: for he loved him as he loved his own soul.

1 SAMUEL 20:

²³And *as touching* the matter which thou and I have spoken of, behold, the LORD be between thee and me for ever.

1 SAMUEL 20:

⁴¹And as soon as the lad was gone, David arose out of *a place* toward the south, and fell on his face to the ground, and bowed himself three times: and they kissed one another, and they with another, until David exceeded.

⁴²And Jonathan said to David, Go in peace, forasmuch as we have sworn both of us in the name of the LORD, saying, The LORD be between me and thee, and between my seed and thy seed for ever. And he arose and departed: and Jonathan went into the city.

“They said therefore unto him, What sign showest thou then, that we may see, and believe thee? what dost thou work?” John 6:30

¹⁰Then said David to Jonathan, Who shall tell me? or what if thy father answer thee roughly?

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 21:

¹Then came David to Nob to Ahimelech the priest: and Ahimelech was afraid at the meeting of David, and said unto him, Why *art* thou alone, and no man with thee?

²And David said unto Ahimelech the priest, The king hath commanded me a business, and hath said unto me, Let no man know any thing of the business whereabout I send thee, and what I have commanded thee: and I have appointed *my* servants to such and such a place.

³Now therefore what is under thine hand? give me five loaves of bread in mine hand, or what there is present.

⁴And the priest answered David, and said, *There is* no common bread under mine hand, but there is hallowed bread; if the young men have kept themselves at least from women.

2ND WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 21:

3RD WITNESS

JOHN 6:

³¹Our fathers did eat manna in the desert; as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat.

³²Then Jesus said unto them, **Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven.**

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 6:

³⁴Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread.

³⁵And Jesus said unto them,

...I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst.

³⁶But I said unto you, That ye also have seen me, and believe not.

³⁷All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out.

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

4TH WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 21:

1 SAMUEL 21:

⁵And David answered the priest, and said unto him, Of a truth women *have been* kept from us about these three days, since I came out, and the vessels of the young men are holy, and the bread is in a manner common, yea, though it were sanctified this day in the vessel.

↑

(“common” in that it should be okay to eat)

⁶So the priest gave him hallowed *bread*: for there was no bread there but the showbread, that was taken from before
...the LORD, to put hot bread in the day when it was taken away.

JOHN 6:

³³For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven,

...and giveth life unto the world.

⁴¹The Jews then murmured at him, because he said, I am the bread which came down from heaven.

⁴²And they said, Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how is it then that he saith, I came down from heaven?

↑ ↗

(“How can this bread be okay to eat?”)

⁴³Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves.

⁴⁴No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.

JOHN 6:

³⁸For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.

³⁹And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.

⁴⁰And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

⁵²The Jews therefore strove among themselves, saying,

...How can this man give us his flesh to eat?

⁵³Then Jesus said unto them,

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 21:

2ND WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 21:

3RD WITNESS

JOHN 6:

⁴⁵It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.

⁴⁶Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father.

⁴⁷Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life.

⁴⁸I am that bread of life.

⁴⁹Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead.

⁵⁰This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die.

⁵¹I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread,

...he shall live for ever:

...and the bread that I will give

...is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 6:

⁵³...Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye

...eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you.

⁵⁴Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath ...eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day.

⁵⁵For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed.

⁵⁶He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.

⁵⁷As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father: so he that eateth me, even he shall live by me.

⁵⁸This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread shall live for ever.

⁵⁹These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 21:

⁷Now a certain man of the servants of Saul was there that day, detained before the LORD; and his name was Doeg, an Edomite, the chiefest of the herdmen that *belonged to Saul*.

⁸And David said unto Ahimelech, And is there not here under thine hand spear or sword? for I have neither brought my sword nor my weapons with me, because the king's business required haste.

⁹And the priest said, The sword of Goliath the Philistine, whom thou slewest in the valley of Elah, behold, it *is here* wrapped in a cloth behind the ephod: if thou wilt take that, take *it*: for *there is* no other save that here. And David said, *There is* none like that; give it me.

¹⁰And David arose, and fled that day for fear of Saul, and went to Achish the king of Gath.

(*Gath = homeland of Goliath the Philistine.*)

¹¹And the servants of Achish said unto him, Is not this David the king of the land? did they not sing one to another of him in dances, saying, Saul hath slain his thousands, and David his ten thousands?

¹²And David laid up these words in his heart, and was sore afraid of Achish the king of Gath.

¹³And he changed his behaviour before them, and feigned himself mad in their hands, and scabbled on the doors of the gate, and let his spittle fall down upon his beard.

¹⁴Then said Achish unto his servants, Lo, ye see the man is mad: wherefore *then* have ye brought him to me?

¹⁵Have I need of mad men, that ye have brought this *fellow* to play the mad man in my presence? shall this *fellow* come into my house?

JOHN 6:

⁶⁰Many therefore of his disciples, when they had heard *this*, said, This is an hard saying; who can hear it?

⁶¹When Jesus knew in himself that his disciples murmured at it, he said unto them, **Doth this offend you?**

⁶²**What and if ye shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before?**

⁶³**It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, *they are* spirit, and *they are* life.**

⁶⁴**But there are some of you that believe not**. For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who should betray him.

(*Verses 65-69, 1st comparison.*)

⁶⁵And he said, **Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father**.

⁶⁶From that *time* many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.

⁶⁷Then said Jesus unto the twelve, **Will ye also go away?**

⁶⁸Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life.

⁶⁹And we believe and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God.

(*←David realizes the insanity of trying to ask the enemy Achish for help.*)

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 22:

¹David therefore departed thence, and escaped to the cave Adullam: and when his brethren and all his father's house heard *it*, they went down thither to him.

²And every one *that was* in distress, and every one *that was* in debt, and every one *that was* discontented, gathered themselves unto him; and he became a captain over them: and there were with him about four hundred men.

³And David went thence to Mizpeh of Moab: and he said unto the king of Moab, Let my father and my mother, I pray thee, come forth, *and be* with you, till I know what God will do for me.

⁴And he brought them before the king of Moab: and they dwelt with him all the while that David was in the hold.

⁵And the prophet Gad said unto David, Abide not in the hold; depart, and get thee into the land of Judah. Then David departed, and came into the forest of Hareth.

⁶When Saul heard that David was discovered, and the men that were with him, (now Saul abode in Gibeah under a tree in Ramah, having his spear in his hand, and all his servants *were* standing about him;)

⁷Then Saul said unto his servants that stood about him, Hear now, ye Benjamites; will the son of Jesse give every one of you fields and vineyards, *and* make you all captains of thousands, and captains of hundreds;

⁸That all of you have conspired against me, and *there is* none that showeth me that my son hath made a league with the son of Jesse, and *there is* none of you that is sorry for me, or showeth unto me that my son hath stirred up my servant against me, to lie in wait, as at this day?

⁹Then answered Doeg the Edomite, which was set over the servants of Saul, and said, I saw the son of Jesse coming to Nob, to Ahimelech the son of Ahitub.

¹⁰And he inquired of the LORD for him, and gave him victuals, and gave him the sword of Goliath the Philistine.

¹¹Then the king sent to call Ahimelech the priest, the son of Ahitub, and all his father's house, the priests that *were* in Nob: and they came all of them to the king.

¹²And Saul said, Hear now, thou son of Ahitub. And he answered, Here I *am*, my lord.

¹³And Saul said unto him, Why have ye conspired against me, thou and the son of Jesse, in that thou hast given him bread, and a sword, and hast inquired of God for him, that he should rise against me, to lie in wait, as at this day?

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 6:

(Verses 65-69, 2nd comparison.)

⁶⁵And he said, **Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father.**

⁶⁶From that *time* many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.

⁶⁷Then said Jesus unto the twelve,

...**Will ye also go away?**

1 SAMUEL & JOHN 6

1ST WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 22:

¹⁴Then Ahimelech answered the king, and said,

...And who is so faithful among all thy servants

...as David, which is the king's son in law, and goeth at thy bidding, and is honourable in thine house?

¹⁵Did I then begin to inquire of God for him? be it far from me: let not the king impute *any* thing unto his servant, *nor* to all the house of my father: for thy servant knew nothing of all this, less or more.

¹⁶And the king said, Thou shalt surely die, Ahimelech, thou, and all thy father's house.

¹⁷And the king said unto the footmen that stood about him, Turn, and slay the priests of the LORD; because their hand also *is* with David, and because they knew when he fled, and did not show it to me. But the servants of the king would not put forth their hand to fall upon the priests of the LORD.

¹⁸And the king said to Doeg, Turn thou, and fall upon the priests. And Doeg the Edomite turned, and he fell upon the priests, and slew on that day fourscore and five persons that did wear a linen ephod.

¹⁹And Nob, the city of the priests, smote he with the edge of the sword, both men and women, children and sucklings, and oxen, and asses, and sheep, with the edge of the sword.

²⁰And one of the sons of Ahimelech the son of Ahitub, named Abiathar, escaped, and fled after David.

²¹And Abiathar showed David that Saul had slain the LORD'S priests.

²²And David said unto Abiathar, I knew *it* that day, when Doeg the Edomite was there, that he would surely tell Saul: I have occasioned *the death* of all the persons of thy father's house.

²³Abide thou with me, fear not: for he that seeketh my life seeketh thy life: but with me thou *shalt be* in safeguard.

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 6:

⁶⁸Then Simon Peter answered him,

...Lord, to whom shall we go?

⁶⁹And we believe and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God.

⁶⁸...thou hast the words of eternal life.

(*This verse intentionally out of sequence for illustration.*)

⁷⁰Jesus answered them,

...Have not I chosen you twelve,

...and one of you is a devil?

⁷¹He spake of Judas Iscariot the son of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.

CHAPTER 10

BAPTISM & BURIAL

This is another of those unusual “reverse” patterns similar to the one from Chapter 35 of the first volume of The Two Witnesses. The complexity of it is just as staggering. Statistically, the pattern is impossible because it represents recorded history. Chronologically, the pattern starts in the upper left corner of the page and progresses counter clockwise until it finishes in the upper right corner of the page. The use of Appendix H, Matthew Mark Luke John, is very important in the study of the pattern because it makes available the four gospels in a harmonized format that makes it easier to understand the chronology of the pattern. The Lord reveals the existence of patterns in order that study of it might be made; so, diligently study the scriptural pattern while referencing Appendix H.

BAPTISM & BURIAL

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 3:

¹In those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judaea,

²And saying, Repent ye: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

³For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying,

...The voice of one crying in the wilderness,

...Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

⁴And the same John had his raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins; and his meat was locusts and wild honey.

⁵Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judaea, and all the region round about Jordan,

⁶And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.

⁷But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from

...the wrath to come?

⁸Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance:

⁹And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to *our* father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

¹⁰And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

2ND WITNESS

ACTS 1:

¹⁰And while they looked stedfastly toward heaven as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel;

¹¹Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven.

⁸But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.

⁵For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence.

⁴And, being assembled together with *them*, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for ...the promise of the Father, which, saith he, ye have heard of me.

²Until the day in which he was taken up, after that he through the Holy Ghost had given commandments unto the apostles whom he had chosen:

MARK 16:

¹⁶He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.

¹⁷And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues;

NOTES

Context is messengers of the Lord.

The pattern diverges because those who are not of the Lord can expect wrath, while those who are His receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.

BAPTISM & BURIAL

1 ST WITNESS	2 ND WITNESS	NOTES
<p>MATTHEW 3: ¹¹I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall <u>baptize you with</u></p> <p>...<u>the Holy Ghost,</u></p>	<p>MATTHEW 28: ¹⁸And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. ¹⁹Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, <u>baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:</u></p> <p>LUKE 24: ⁴⁹And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued <u>with power from on high.</u></p> <p>³⁷But they were <u>terrified</u> and <u>affrighted</u>, and supposed that they had seen a spirit. ³⁸And he said unto them, Why are ye <u>troubled?</u> and why do thoughts arise in your hearts? ³⁹Behold <u>my hands</u> and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.</p>	
<p>¹²Whose fan <u>is in his hand</u>, and he will <u>thoroughly purge his floor,</u></p>	<p>JOHN 20: ¹⁹Then the same day at evening, being the first <i>day</i> of the week, when the doors were shut where the <u>disciples were assembled</u> for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace <i>be</i> unto you.</p>	<p><i>The context of "purge" is the trial of our faith to see whether or not we believe. True faith results in peace and not in emotion.</i></p>
<p>...and <u>gather his wheat</u> into the garner;</p>	<p>MATTHEW 27: ⁶²Now the next day, that followed the day of the preparation, ...<u>the chief priests and Pharisees</u> came together unto <u>Pilate</u>, ⁶³Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again. ⁶⁴Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first.</p>	<p><i>Being religious won't get you into heaven. Having a love relationship with Jesus is the only way.</i></p>
<p>...but <u>he will burn up the chaff</u> with unquenchable fire.</p>		

BAPTISM & BURIAL

1 ST WITNESS	2 ND WITNESS	NOTES
MATTHEW 3: ¹³ Then cometh <u>Jesus</u> from Galilee to Jordan	MATTHEW 27: ⁵⁷ When the even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathaea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus' disciple:	
...unto <u>John</u> , to be baptized of him.	⁵⁸ <u>He went to Pilate</u> , and	
¹⁴ But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?		
¹⁵ And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness.	... <u>begged the body of Jesus.</u>	
... <u>Then he suffered him.</u>	... <u>Then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered.</u>	
¹⁶ And <u>Jesus</u> ,	⁵⁹ And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth,	
...when he was <u>baptized</u> ,	⁶⁰ And <u>laid it in his own new tomb</u> , which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed.	<i>Parallel of the water baptism of Jesus with the burial of Jesus.</i>
MATTHEW 3: ¹⁶ ...went up straightway <u>out of the water</u> :	JOHN 19: ³⁴ But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith <u>came there out blood and water.</u>	<i>Birth of the regenerated man and the birth of the church.</i>
...and, lo, <u>the heavens were opened</u> unto him,	MARK 15: ³⁸ And <u>the veil of the temple was rent in twain</u> from the top to the bottom.	
...and he saw the <u>Spirit of God</u> descending like a dove, and lighting upon him:	LUKE 23: ⁴⁶ ...and having said thus, he gave up the <u>ghost</u> .	
¹⁷ And lo a <u>voice</u> from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.	⁴⁶ And when Jesus had cried with a loud <u>voice</u> , ...he said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit:	
MATTHEW 4:1-11 (Jesus is in the wilderness and is tempted of the devil.)	MATTHEW 27:34-44 (Jesus is on the cross and is tempted of the devil.)	<i>For details, see the previous chapter on "The Two Temptations".</i>

CHAPTER 11

EXODUS 14 - MATTHEW 8 - JONAH

This chapter illustrates a match-up between Exodus 14 and Matthew 8, which has already been covered in Chapter 14 of the first volume of The Two Witnesses. Additionally, this chapter reveals that Exodus 14 and Matthew 8 also match-up with the first half of the book of Jonah! Keep in mind that these books of the Bible actually represent recorded history, and for recorded history to match in such exact patterns is statistically impossible. This point is made repeatedly in each volume of The Two Witnesses in order to strongly impress upon the reader that God is completely in control of past, present, and future.

“Daniel answered and said, Blessed be the name of God for ever and ever: for wisdom and might are his: And he changeth the times and the seasons: he removeth kings, and setteth up kings: he giveth wisdom unto the wise, and knowledge to them that know understanding: He revealeth the deep and secret things: he knoweth what *is* in the darkness, and the light dwelleth with him.”

Daniel 2:20-22

After studying this chapter, the reader can attempt to contemplate questions which are essentially without answers; such as: “What if Jonah had decided not to flee Nineveh?” or “What if Jonah had perished when he was thrown overboard?” The contemplation of such things is not as beneficial to us as is the contemplation of God’s Word for our own life:

“Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God, and keep his commandments: for this *is* the whole *duty* of man.”

Ecclesiastes 12:13

“Thus saith the LORD, thy Redeemer, the Holy One of Israel; I *am* the LORD thy God which teacheth thee to profit, which leadeth thee by the way *that* thou shouldest go. O that thou hadst hearkened to my commandments! then had thy peace been as a river, and thy righteousness as the waves of the sea: Thy seed also had been as the sand, and the offspring of thy bowels like the gravel thereof; his name should not have been cut off nor destroyed from before me.”

Isaiah 48:17-19

EXODUS 14 - MATTHEW 8 - JONAH

1ST WITNESS

PSALM 105:

³⁷...there was not one feeble person among their tribes.

³⁸Egypt was glad when they departed: for the fear of them fell upon them.

EXODUS 14:

¹And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, ²Speak unto the children of Israel, that they turn and encamp before Pihahiroth, between Migdol and the sea, over against Baalzephon: before it shall ye encamp by the sea.

⁹But the Egyptians pursued after them, all the horses *and* chariots of Pharaoh, and his horsemen, and his army, and overtook them encamping by the sea, beside Pihahiroth, before Baalzephon.

¹⁰And when Pharaoh drew nigh, the children of Israel lifted up their eyes, and, behold, the Egyptians marched after them; and they were sore afraid: and the children of Israel cried out unto the LORD.

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 8:

¹⁶When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits with *his* word, and ...healed all that were sick:

¹⁷That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare *our* sicknesses.

¹⁸Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave commandment

...to depart unto the other side.

¹⁹And a certain scribe came, and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.

²⁰And Jesus saith unto him, **The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.**

²¹And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.

²²But Jesus said unto him, **Follow me; and let the dead bury their dead.**

²³And when he was entered into a ship, his disciples followed him.

²⁴And, behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves: but he was asleep.

²⁵And his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord, save us: we perish.

3RD WITNESS

JONAH 1:

¹Now the word of the LORD came unto Jonah the son of Amittai, saying,

²Arise, go to Nineveh, that great city, and cry against it; for their wickedness is come up before me.

³But Jonah rose up to flee unto Tarshish from the presence of the LORD, and went down to Joppa; and he found a ship going to Tarshish: so he paid the fare thereof, and went down into it, to go with them unto Tarshish from the presence of the LORD.

⁴But the LORD sent out a great wind into the sea, and there was a mighty tempest in the sea, so that the ship was like to be broken.

⁵Then the mariners were afraid, and cried every man unto his god, and cast forth the wares that were in the ship into the sea, to lighten *it* of them. But Jonah was gone down into the sides of the ship; and he lay, and was fast asleep.

EXODUS 14 - MATTHEW 8 - JONAH

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

EXODUS 14:

¹³And Moses said unto the people, Fear ye not, stand still, and see the salvation of the LORD...

²¹And Moses stretched out his hand over the sea; and the LORD caused the sea to go back by a strong east wind all that night, and made the sea dry *land*, ...and the waters were divided.

MATTHEW 8:

²⁶And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith?

²⁶...Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea;

...and there was a great calm.

²⁷But the men marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him!

JONAH 1:

⁶So the shipmaster came to him, and said unto him, What meanest thou, O sleeper? arise, call upon thy God, if so be that God will think upon us, that we perish not.

⁷And they said every one to his fellow, Come, and let us cast lots, that we may know for whose cause this evil *is* upon us. So they cast lots, and the lot fell upon Jonah.

⁸Then said they unto him, Tell us, we pray thee, for whose cause this evil *is* upon us; What *is* thine occupation? and whence comest thou? what *is* thy country? and of what people *art* thou?

⁹And he said unto them, I *am* an Hebrew; and I fear the LORD, the God of heaven, which hath made the sea and the dry *land*.

¹⁰Then were the men exceedingly afraid, and said unto him, Why hast thou done this? For the men knew that he fled from the presence of the LORD, because he had told them.

¹¹Then said they unto him, What shall we do unto thee, that the sea may be calm unto us? for the sea wrought, and was tempestuous.

¹²And he said unto them, Take me up, and cast me forth into the sea; so shall the sea be calm unto you: for I know that for my sake this great tempest *is* upon you.

¹³Nevertheless the men rowed hard to bring *it* to the land; but they could not: for the sea wrought, and was tempestuous against them.

EXODUS 14 - MATTHEW 8 - JONAH

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

MATTHEW 8:

²⁸And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way.

²⁹And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time?

³⁰And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine feeding.

³¹So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine.

³²And he said unto them, **Go**. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and, behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea,

...and perished in the waters.

JONAH 1:

¹⁴Wherefore they cried unto the LORD, and said, We beseech thee, O LORD, we beseech thee, let us not perish for this man's life, and lay not upon us innocent blood: for thou, O LORD, hast done as it pleased thee.

¹⁵So they took up Jonah, and cast him forth into the sea: and the sea ceased from her raging.

¹⁶Then the men feared the LORD exceedingly, and offered a sacrifice unto the LORD, and made vows.

¹⁷Now the LORD had prepared a great fish to swallow up Jonah. And Jonah was in the belly of the fish three days and three nights.

JONAH 2:

¹Then Jonah prayed unto the LORD his God out of the fish's belly,

²And said, I cried by reason of mine affliction unto the LORD, and he heard me; out of the belly of hell cried I, *and* thou heardest my voice.

³For thou hadst cast me into the deep, in the midst of the seas; and the floods compassed me about: all thy billows and thy waves passed over me.

⁴Then I said, I am cast out of thy sight; yet I will look again toward thy holy temple.

⁵The waters compassed me about, *even* to the soul: the depth closed me round about, the weeds were wrapped about my head.

EXODUS 14:

²³And the Egyptians pursued, ...and went in after them to the midst of the sea, *even* all Pharaoh's horses, his chariots, and his horsemen.

²⁷...and the LORD overthrew the Egyptians in the midst of the sea.

EXODUS 14 - MATTHEW 8 - JONAH

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

JONAH 2:

⁶I went down to the bottoms of the mountains; the earth with her bars was about me for ever: yet hast thou brought up my life from corruption, O LORD my God.

⁷When my soul fainted within me I remembered the LORD: and my prayer came in unto thee, into thine holy temple.

⁸They that observe lying vanities forsake their own mercy.

⁹But I will sacrifice unto thee with the voice of thanksgiving; I will pay *that* that I have vowed. Salvation *is* of the LORD.

¹⁰And the LORD spake unto the fish, and it vomited out Jonah upon the dry *land*.

JONAH 3:

¹And the word of the LORD came unto Jonah the second time, saying,

²Arise, go unto Nineveh, that great city, and preach unto it the preaching that I bid thee.

³So Jonah arose, and went unto Nineveh, according to the word of the LORD. Now Nineveh was an exceeding great city of three days' journey.

⁴And Jonah began to enter into the city a day's journey, and he cried, and said, Yet forty days, and Nineveh shall be overthrown.

⁵So the people of Nineveh believed God, and proclaimed a fast, and put on sackcloth, from the greatest of them even to the least of them.

MATTHEW 8:

³³And they that kept them fled, and went their ways into the city, and told every thing, and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils.

³⁴And, behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus: and when they saw him, they besought *him* that he would depart out of their coasts.

EXODUS 15:

¹Then sang Moses and the children of Israel this song unto the LORD, and spake, saying, I will sing unto the LORD, for he hath triumphed gloriously: the horse and his rider hath he thrown into the sea.

EXODUS 14 - MATTHEW 8 - JONAH

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

JONAH 3:

⁶For word came unto the king of Nineveh, and he arose from his throne, and he laid his robe from him, and covered *him* with sackcloth, and sat in ashes.

⁷And he caused *it* to be proclaimed and published through Nineveh by the decree of the king and his nobles, saying, Let neither man nor beast, herd nor flock, taste any thing: let them not feed, nor drink water:

⁸But let man and beast be covered with sackcloth, and cry mightily unto God: yea, let them turn every one from his evil way, and from the violence that *is* in their hands.

⁹Who can tell *if* God will turn and repent, and turn away from his fierce anger, that we perish not?

¹⁰And God saw their works, that they turned from their evil way; and God repented of the evil, that he had said that he would do unto them; and he did *it* not.

CHAPTER 12

JONAH & JESUS

This Bible pattern was first presented by Gene Faulstich, on the parallel between the lives of Jonah and Jesus during their trials. It is another example of history repeating itself, but according to God's order and not coincidence.

The big picture is that God ordained a trial by fire for Jonah and for Jesus in order to accomplish His work on the earth. God wanted to save the souls of Nineveh by his prophet Jonah and God wanted to save the souls of mankind from their sins by his son Jesus.

Each one was completely dependent upon God in order to accomplish their mission. Jonah had an attitude problem with anger because he was trying to take ownership of the result of his prophetic word. Jonah fully expected to see judgment rain down upon Nineveh because of "his" prophecy. God's intent was to save these souls and it was God's business what the result of the prophecy was going to be, and not Jonah's business.

"He hath showed thee, O man, what *is* good; and what doth the LORD require of thee, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God?" Micah 6:8

JONAH & JESUS

1ST WITNESS

JONAH 1:

¹Now the word of the LORD came unto Jonah the son of Amittai, saying,

²Arise, go to Nineveh, that great city, and cry against it; for their wickedness is come up before me.

³But Jonah rose up to flee unto Tarshish from the presence of the LORD, and went down to Joppa; and he found a ship going to Tarshish: so he paid the fare thereof, and went down into it, to go with them unto Tarshish from the presence of the LORD.

⁴But the LORD sent out a great wind into the sea, and there was a mighty tempest in the sea, so that the ship was like to be broken.

⁵Then the mariners were afraid, and cried every man unto his god, and cast forth the wares that *were* in the ship into the sea, to lighten *it* of them. But Jonah was gone down into the sides of the ship; and he lay, and was fast asleep.

⁶So the shipmaster came to him, and said unto him, What meanest thou, O sleeper? arise, call upon thy God, if so be that God will think upon us, that we perish not.

⁷And they said every one to his fellow, Come, and let us cast lots, that we may know for whose cause this evil *is* upon us. So they cast lots, and the lot fell upon Jonah.

⁸Then said they unto him, Tell us, we pray thee, for whose cause this evil is upon us; What *is* thine occupation? and whence comest thou? what *is* thy country? and of what people *art* thou?

⁹And he said unto them, I am an Hebrew; and I fear the LORD, the God of heaven, which hath made the sea and the dry *land*.

¹⁰Then were the men exceedingly afraid, and said unto him, Why hast thou done this? For the men knew that he fled from the presence of the LORD, because he had told them.

¹¹Then said they unto him, What shall we do unto thee, that the sea may be calm unto us? for the sea wrought, and was tempestuous.

¹²And he said unto them, Take me up, and cast me forth into the sea; so shall the sea be calm unto you: for I know that for my sake this great tempest *is* upon you.

¹³Nevertheless the men rowed hard to bring *it* to the land; but they could not: for the sea wrought, and was tempestuous against them.

¹⁴Wherefore they cried unto the LORD, and said, We beseech thee, O LORD, we beseech thee, let us not perish for this man's life, ...and lay not upon us innocent blood: for thou, O LORD, hast done as it pleased thee.

2ND WITNESS

JESUS:

²²Now it came to pass on a certain day, that he went into a ship with his disciples: and he said unto them, Let us go over unto the other side of the lake. And they launched forth.

²³But as they sailed he fell asleep: and there came down a storm of wind on the lake; and they were filled *with water*, and were in jeopardy.

²⁴And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, master, we perish. Then he arose, and rebuked the wind and the raging of the water: and they ceased, and there was a calm.

²⁵And he said unto them, Where is your faith? And they being afraid wondered, saying one to another,

...What manner of man is this!

...for he commandeth even the winds and water, and they obey him. Luke 8:22-25

²⁴When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but *that* rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed *his* hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person: see ye *to it*. Matthew 27:24

JONAH & JESUS

1ST WITNESS

JONAH 1:

¹⁵So they took up Jonah, and cast him forth into the sea: and the sea ceased from her raging.

¹⁶Then the men feared the LORD exceedingly, and offered a sacrifice unto the LORD, and made vows.

¹⁷Now the LORD had prepared a great fish to swallow up Jonah. And Jonah was in the belly of the fish three days and three nights.

JONAH 2:

¹Then Jonah prayed unto the LORD his God out of the fish's belly,

²And said, I cried by reason of mine affliction unto the LORD, and he heard me; out of the belly of hell cried I, and thou heardest my voice.

³For thou hadst cast me into the deep, in the midst of the seas; and the floods compassed me about: all thy billows and thy waves passed over me.

⁴Then I said, I am cast out of thy sight; yet I will look again toward thy holy temple.

⁵The waters compassed me about, *even* to the soul: the depth closed me round about, the weeds were wrapped about my head.

⁶I went down to the bottoms of the mountains; the earth with her bars *was* about me for ever: yet hast thou brought up my life from corruption, O LORD my God.

⁷When my soul fainted within me I remembered the LORD: and my prayer came in unto thee, into thine holy temple.

⁸They that observe lying vanities forsake their own mercy.

⁹But I will sacrifice unto thee with the voice of thanksgiving; I will pay *that* that I have vowed. Salvation is of the LORD.

¹⁰And the LORD spake unto the fish, ...and it vomited out Jonah upon the dry *land*.

2ND WITNESS

JESUS:

²¹But they cried, saying, Crucify him, crucify him.
Luke 23:21

⁴⁰For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

Matthew 12:40

⁴¹And he was withdrawn from them about a stone's cast, and kneeled down, and prayed,

⁴²Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done.

⁴³And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him.

Luke 22:41-43

⁴³And immediately, while he yet spake, cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and the scribes and the elders.

⁴⁶And they laid their hands on him, and took him.
Mark 14:43,46

¹⁶Then delivered he him therefore unto them to be crucified. And they took Jesus, and led him away.
John 19:16

¹⁷And they clothed him with purple, and platted a crown of thorns, and put it about his head,
Mark 15:17

⁴⁴And it was about the sixth hour, and there was a darkness over all the earth until the ninth hour.

⁴⁵And the sun was darkened, and the veil of the temple was rent in the midst.

⁴⁶And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said thus, he gave up the ghost.
Luke 23:44-46

⁵And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified.

⁶He is not here: for he is risen, as he said. Come, see the place where the Lord lay. Matthew 28:5-6

JONAH & JESUS

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

JONAH 3:

¹And the word of the LORD came unto Jonah the second time, saying,

²Arise, go unto Nineveh, that great city, and preach unto it the preaching that I bid thee.

³So Jonah arose, and went unto Nineveh, according to the word of the LORD. Now Nineveh was an exceeding great city of three days' journey.

⁴And Jonah began to enter into the city a day's journey, and he cried, and said, Yet forty days, and Nineveh shall be overthrown.

⁵So the people of Nineveh believed God, and proclaimed a fast, and put on sackcloth, from the greatest of them even to the least of them.

⁶For word came unto the king of Nineveh, and he arose from his throne, and he laid his robe from him, and covered *him* with sackcloth, and sat in ashes.

⁷And he caused *it* to be proclaimed and published through Nineveh by the decree of the king and his nobles, saying, Let neither man nor beast, herd nor flock, taste any thing: let them not feed, nor drink water:

⁸But let man and beast be covered with sackcloth, and cry mightily unto God: yea, let them turn every one from his evil way, and from the violence that *is* in their hands.

⁹Who can tell *if* God will turn and repent, and turn away from his fierce anger, that we perish not?

¹⁰And God saw their works, that they turned from their evil way; and God repented of the evil, that he had said that he would do unto them; and he did *it* not.

JONAH 4:

¹But it displeased Jonah exceedingly, and he was very angry.

⁴Then said the LORD, Doest thou well to be angry?

⁹And God said to Jonah, Doest thou well to be angry for the gourd?...

JESUS:

40 days before judgment Nineveh repented; however, 40 years after Nineveh (723 BC) judgment came and the northern tribes were deported out of their land. (Jereboam northern tribes rejected the plea of God.) 40 years after Jesus, the southern tribes were deported out of their land. (The Jews rejected Jesus.)

Jonah had an apparent anger issue, evident when "his" prophecy would not be coming to pass. The Lord's prophecy did come to pass 40 years later.

JONAH & JESUS

1ST WITNESS

JONAH 4:

²And he prayed unto the LORD, and said, I pray thee, O LORD, was not this my saying, when I was yet in my country? Therefore I fled before unto Tarshish: for I knew that thou *art* a gracious God, and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repentest thee of the evil.

³Therefore now, O LORD, take, I beseech thee, my life from me; for it is better for me to die than to live.

⁵So Jonah went out of the city, and sat on the east side of the city, and there made him a booth, and sat under it in the shadow, till he might see what would become of the city.

⁶And the LORD God prepared a gourd, and made *it* to come up over Jonah, that it might be a shadow over his head, to deliver him from his grief. So Jonah was exceeding glad of the gourd.

⁷But God prepared a worm when the morning rose the next day, and it smote the gourd that it withered. ⁸And it came to pass, when the sun did arise, that God prepared a vehement east wind; and the sun beat upon the head of Jonah, that he fainted, and wished in himself to die, and said, It is better for me to die than to live.

⁹...And he said, I do well to be angry, even unto death.

¹⁰Then said the LORD, Thou hast had pity on the gourd, for the which thou hast not laboured, neither madest it grow; which came up in a night, and perished in a night:

¹¹And should not I spare Nineveh, that great city, wherein are more than sixscore thousand persons that cannot discern between their right hand and their left hand; and *also* much cattle?

2ND WITNESS

JESUS:

Jonah waited 40 days to see what would happen. Jesus came back for 40 days.

Jonah was so concerned for his reputation as a prophet, that he would rather die than see "his" prophecy not come to pass.

God would prefer his attitude to be self-sacrificial and merciful so that Jonah would want to see the souls of Nineveh saved at the expense of his reputation as a prophet.

Discernment: the gentiles came unto the knowledge of salvation without knowing the law or the prophets.

CHAPTER 13

HELL

Luke 16, verses 19-31, is considered to be one of the most descriptive sections of the Bible concerning the place called hell and what it is like there. Using the Infinity Bible Code, more information can be obtained about the characteristics of hell.

Recall that:

OT = Old Testament, with 39 books and 929 chapters
NT = New Testament, with 27 books and 260 chapters

Some of the Bible chapters that match up with Luke 16 are as follows:

60 th chapter of NT	= Luke 16
60 th chapter of OT	= Exodus 10
60 + 260	= 2 Kings 7, 320 th chapter of OT
0 + 260x2	= Psalm 42, 520 th chapter of OT
60 + 260x3	= Ezekiel 38, 840 th chapter of OT

Additional Bible chapters with multiples of 60 can be researched for even more information. In the two pages following, the five chapters above are tabulated and have key words underlined to show pattern matches and to show details such as the types of torment that take place. May this information be of use to whoever is in need of extra motivation in order to flee from temptation and to walk in love and forgiveness!

The Hebrew phonetic spelling for Lucifer is "HYLL" (pronounced heylel) and is believed to be the etymological origin of the word "hell". The numerical value of HYLL is 75. Another Hebrew word that has a value of 75 is "NAKAH". It means to smite, beat, kill, slaughter. There is at least one example in the New Testament where the context of Lucifer / kill is used in the same verse. In John 8:44a, Jesus said "**Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning...**"

The Hebrew word for hell in the Old Testament is pronounced "shehole" (Strong's 7585) and it means hades / world of the dead / grave / hell / pit. From this word is the origin of the English word Sheole and it means the underworld place of hell. A Greek word used for hell in the New Testament is pronounced "hades" (Strong's 86) and it means grave / hell. Another Greek word is "gehenna" (Strong's 1067) and it is in reference to the valley of Hinnom or Ge-Hinnom which is a valley in Jerusalem. It means the place of everlasting punishment / hell.

There is a third Greek word used for hell in the New Testament pronounced "tartaroo" (Strong's 5020) and it means to incarcerate in eternal torment or to cast down to hell. It comes from the word "Tartaros" meaning the deepest abyss of hades. Tartaroo is used only one time in the New Testament:

"For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast *them* down to hell, and delivered *them* into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment;" 2 Peter 2:4

This is very similar to the following verse and is likely in reference to the same thing:

"And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day." Jude 1:6

The term "bottomless pit" is found seven times in the book of Revelation and is very likely in reference to tartaroo. The Greek word for bottomless is pronounced "abussos" (Strong's 12) and it can also mean depthless / abyss / deep / pit.

HELL

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 16:

¹⁹There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day:

²⁰And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores,

²¹And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores.

²²And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried;

²³And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.

²⁴And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.

²⁵But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

2ND WITNESS

EXODUS 10:

¹³And Moses stretched forth his rod over the land of Egypt, and the LORD brought an east wind upon the land all that day, and all that night; and when it was morning, the east wind brought the locusts.

¹⁴And the locusts went up over all the land of Egypt, and rested in all the coasts of Egypt: very grievous were they; before them there were no such locusts as they, neither after them shall be such.

¹⁵For they covered the face of the whole earth, so that the land was darkened; and they did eat every herb of the land, and all the fruit of the trees which the hail had left: and there remained not any green thing in the trees, or in the herbs of the field, through all the land of Egypt.

3RD WITNESS

2 KINGS 7:

³And there were four leprous men at the entering in of the gate: and they said one to another, Why sit we here until we die?

⁴If we say, We will enter into the city, then the famine is in the city, and we shall die there: and if we sit still here, we die also. Now therefore come, and let us fall unto the host of the Syrians: if they save us alive, we shall live; and if they kill us, we shall but die.

⁸And when these lepers came to the uttermost part of the camp, they went into one tent, and did eat and drink, and carried thence silver, and gold, and raiment, and went and hid it; and came again, and entered into another tent, and carried thence also, and went and hid it.

4TH WITNESS

PSALM 42:

¹As the hart panteth after the water brooks, so panteth my soul after thee, O God.

²My soul thirsteth for God, for the living God: when shall I come and appear before God?
³My tears have been my meat day and night, while they continually say unto me, Where is thy God?
⁴When I remember these things, I pour out my soul in me: for I had gone with the multitude, I went with them to the house of God, with the voice of joy and praise, with a multitude that kept holyday.

⁵Why art thou cast down, O my soul? and why art thou disquieted in me? hope thou in God: for I shall yet praise him for the help of his countenance.
⁶O my God, my soul is cast down within me: therefore will I remember thee from the land of Jordan, and of the Hermonites, from the hill Mizar.

5TH WITNESS

EZEKIEL 38:

²¹And I will call for a sword against him throughout all my mountains, saith the Lord GOD: every man's sword shall be against his brother.

²²And I will plead against him with pestilence and with blood; and I will rain upon him, and upon his bands, and upon the many people that are with him, an overflowing rain, and great hailstones, fire, and brimstone.

HELL

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 16:

²⁶And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that *would come* from thence.

²⁷Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house:

²⁸For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

²⁹Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them.

³⁰And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent.

³¹And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.

2ND WITNESS

EXODUS 10:

²¹And the LORD said unto Moses, Stretch out thine hand toward heaven, that there may be darkness over the land of Egypt, even darkness which may be felt.

²²And Moses stretched forth his hand toward heaven; and there was a thick darkness in all the land of Egypt three days:

²³They saw not one another, neither rose any from his place for three days: but all the children of Israel had light in their dwellings.

3RD WITNESS

2 KINGS 7:

¹⁸And it came to pass as the man of God had spoken to the king, saying, Two measures of barley for a shekel, and a measure of fine flour for a shekel, shall be to morrow about this time in the gate of Samaria:

¹⁹And that lord answered the man of God, and said, Now, behold, *if* the LORD should make windows in heaven, might such a thing be? And he said, Behold, thou shalt see it with thine eyes, but shalt not eat thereof.

²⁰And so it fell out unto him: for the people trode upon him in the gate, and he died.

4TH WITNESS

PSALM 42:

⁷Deep calleth unto deep at the noise of thy waterspouts: all thy waves and thy billows are gone over me.

⁸*Yet* the LORD will command his lovingkindness in the daytime, and in the night his song *shall be* with me, *and* my prayer unto the God of my life.

⁹I will say unto God my rock, Why hast thou forgotten me? why go I mourning because of the oppression of the enemy?

¹⁰As with a sword in my bones, mine enemies reproach me; while they say daily unto me, Where is thy God?

¹¹Why art thou cast down, O my soul? and why art thou disquieted within me? hope thou in God: for I shall yet praise him, *who is* the health of my countenance, and my God.

5TH WITNESS

EZEKIEL 38:

CHAPTER 14

REVIVAL

What an amazing Bible pattern between the story of Jonah and the parable of the prodigal son, to help us understand what revival is! For more study on the subject, Charles Finney's preaching on revival is highly recommended.

Whether it is running away from the calling of the Lord or chasing after the things of the world, you discover how much risk and danger there is in rebellion and riotous living. To top it off, you are rejected by sinners because you have fled from the presence of the Lord.

You arrive at the point of desolation and poverty in your life so then you begin serving the world and it swallows you up as one of its many slaves. There appears to be no escape and you feel like a nobody. You got so busy fulfilling your physical appetite that you were rewarded with spiritual famine and then physical famine.

You come to your senses with the revelation that you are a child of God and the purpose of this dead end was not your final destiny but to help you realize what your true priority and purpose is. So then you call out to the Lord in prayer, and with determination you decide to serve the Lord the rest of your days no matter what because you know He will take care of you.

You approach the Lord with all lowliness, humility, and repentance and that's when He pours out his grace, mercy, and love upon you and throws a celebration. Afterwards, you wonder why you ever left Him in the first place?

"Wilt thou not revive us again: that thy people may rejoice in thee?"

Psalm 85:6

REVIVAL

1ST WITNESS

JONAH 1:

¹Now the word of the LORD came unto Jonah the son of Amittai, saying,

²Arise, go to Nineveh, that great city, and cry against it; for their wickedness is come up before me.

³But Jonah rose up to flee unto Tarshish from the presence of the LORD, and went down to Joppa;

...and he found a ship going to Tarshish: so he paid the fare thereof, and went down into it, to go with them unto Tarshish from the presence of the LORD.

⁴But the LORD sent out a great wind into the sea, and there was a mighty tempest in the sea, so that the ship was like to be broken.

⁵Then the mariners were afraid, and cried every man unto his god, and cast forth the wares that *were* in the ship into the sea, to lighten *it* of them. But Jonah was gone down into the sides of the ship; and he lay, and was fast asleep.

⁶So the shipmaster came to him, and said unto him, What meanest thou, O sleeper? arise, call upon thy God, if so be that God will think upon us, that we perish not.

⁷And they said every one to his fellow, Come, and let us cast lots, that we may know for whose cause this evil *is* upon us. So they cast lots, and the lot fell upon Jonah.

⁸Then said they unto him, Tell us, we pray thee, for whose cause this evil is upon us; What *is* thine occupation? and whence comest thou? what *is* thy country? and of what people *art* thou?

⁹And he said unto them, I *am* an Hebrew; and I fear the LORD, the God of heaven, which hath made the sea and the dry *land*.

¹⁰Then were the men exceedingly afraid, and said unto him, Why hast thou done this? For the men knew that he fled from the presence of the LORD, because he had told them.

¹¹Then said they unto him, What shall we do unto thee, that the sea may be calm unto us? for the sea wrought, and was tempestuous.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 15:

¹¹And he said, A certain man had two sons:

¹²And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them *his* living.

¹³And not many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country,

and there wasted his substance with riotous living.

REVIVAL

1ST WITNESS

JONAH 1:

¹²And he said unto them, Take me up, and cast me forth into the sea; so shall the sea be calm unto you: for I know that for my sake this great tempest *is* upon you.

¹³Nevertheless the men rowed hard to bring *it* to the land; but they could not: for the sea wrought, and was tempestuous against them.

¹⁴Wherefore they cried unto the LORD, and said, We beseech thee, O LORD, we beseech thee, let us not perish for this man's life, and lay not upon us innocent blood: for thou, O LORD, hast done as it pleased thee.

¹⁵So they took up Jonah,

...and cast him forth into the sea: and the sea ceased from her raging.

¹⁶Then the men feared the LORD exceedingly, and offered a sacrifice unto the LORD, and made vows.

¹⁷Now the LORD had prepared a great fish to swallow up Jonah. And Jonah was in the belly of the fish three days and three nights.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 15:

¹⁴And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want.

¹⁵And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country;

...and he sent him into his fields

...to feed swine.

REVIVAL

1ST WITNESS

JONAH 2:

¹Then Jonah prayed unto the LORD his God out of the fish's belly,

²And said, I cried by reason of mine affliction unto the LORD, and he heard me; out of the belly of hell cried I, and thou heardest my voice.

³For thou hadst cast me into the deep, in the midst of the seas; and the floods compassed me about: all thy billows and thy waves passed over me.

⁴Then I said, I am cast out of thy sight; yet I will look again toward thy holy temple.

⁵The waters compassed me about, even to the soul: the depth closed me round about, the weeds were wrapped about my head.

⁶I went down to the bottoms of the mountains; the earth with her bars was about me for ever: yet hast thou brought up my life from corruption, O LORD my God.

⁷When my soul fainted within me I remembered the LORD: and my prayer came in unto thee, into thine holy temple.

⁸They that observe lying vanities forsake their own mercy.

⁹But I will sacrifice unto thee with the voice of thanksgiving; I will pay *that* that I have vowed.

Salvation is of the LORD.

¹⁰And the LORD spake unto the fish, ...and it vomited out Jonah upon the dry land.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 15:

¹⁶And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat:

and no man gave unto him.

¹⁷And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger!

¹⁸I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee,

¹⁹And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants.

²⁰And he arose, and came to his father...

REVIVAL

1ST WITNESS

JONAH 3:

¹And the word of the LORD came unto Jonah the second time, saying,

²Arise, go unto Nineveh, that great city, and preach unto it the preaching that I bid thee.

³So Jonah arose, and went unto Nineveh, according to the word of the LORD. Now Nineveh was an exceeding great city of three days' journey.

⁴And Jonah began to enter into the city a day's journey, and he cried, and said, Yet forty days, and Nineveh shall be overthrown.

⁵So the people of Nineveh believed God, and proclaimed a fast, and put on sackcloth, from the greatest of them even to the least of them.

⁶For word came unto the king of Nineveh, and he arose from his throne, and he laid his robe from him, and covered *him* with sackcloth, and sat in ashes.

⁷And he caused *it* to be proclaimed and published through Nineveh by the decree of the king and his nobles, saying, Let neither man nor beast, herd nor flock, taste any thing: let them not feed, nor drink water:

⁸But let man and beast be covered with sackcloth, and cry mightily unto God: yea, let them turn every one from his evil way, and from the violence that *is* in their hands.

⁹Who can tell *if* God will turn and repent, and turn away from his fierce anger, that we perish not?

¹⁰And God saw their works, that they turned from their evil way; and God repented of the evil, that he had said that he would do unto them; and he did *it* not.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 15:

²⁰...But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him.

²¹And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son.

²²But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put *it* on him;

...and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on *his feet*:

²³And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill *it*; and let us eat, and be merry:

²⁴For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.

²⁵Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing.

²⁶And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant.

²⁷And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound.

REVIVAL

1ST WITNESS

JONAH 4:

¹But it displeased Jonah exceedingly, and he was very angry.

⁴Then said the LORD, Doest thou well to be angry?

⁹And God said to Jonah, Doest thou well to be angry for the gourd?...

²And he prayed unto the LORD, and said, I pray thee, O LORD, was not this my saying, when I was yet in my country? Therefore I fled before unto Tarshish: for I knew that thou *art* a gracious God, and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repentest thee of the evil.

³Therefore now, O LORD, take, I beseech thee, my life from me; for it is better for me to die than to live.

⁵So Jonah went out of the city, and sat on the east side of the city, and there made him a booth, and sat under it in the shadow, till he might see what would become of the city.

⁶And the LORD God prepared a gourd, and made *it* to come up over Jonah, that it might be a shadow over his head, to deliver him from his grief. So Jonah was exceeding glad of the gourd.

⁷But God prepared a worm when the morning rose the next day, and it smote the gourd that it withered. ⁸And it came to pass, when the sun did arise, that God prepared a vehement east wind; and the sun beat upon the head of Jonah, that he fainted, and wished in himself to die, and said, It is better for me to die than to live.

⁹...And he said, I do well to be angry, *even* unto death.

¹⁰Then said the LORD, Thou hast had pity on the gourd, for the which thou hast not laboured, neither madest it grow; which came up in a night, and perished in a night:

¹¹And should not I spare Nineveh, that great city, wherein are more than sixscore thousand persons that cannot discern between their right hand and their left hand; and *also* much cattle?

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 15:

²⁸And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, and entreated him.

(Anger: symptom of a religious spirit?)

²⁹And he answering said to *his* father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment: and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends:

³⁰But as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots,

...thou hast killed for him the fatted calf.

(Holier than thou: symptom of a religious spirit?)

³¹And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine.

³²It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

¹⁰Likewise, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.

(verse 10 out of sequence for illustration)

CHAPTER 15

EXODUS & THE FEASTS

The following pattern reveals a match between the story of Moses in Exodus and the seven feasts of the Lord. The seven feasts are also a pattern for a Christian's life. Life is short so the message from the Bible continues to emphasize that the focus should be on Jesus:

"For to me to live *is* Christ, and to die *is* gain."

Phillipians 1:21

In studying this pattern, there is a possible illustration of how the last Pope is established as the global religious leader. Per Exodus, Moses went "up" after the Red Sea crossing; then the image came forth. The last Pope, in the position of Aaron the high priest, has to be in place prior to the image being revealed.

EXODUS & THE FEASTS

1ST WITNESS (EXODUS)

- Ch. 12-14: The first Passover.
Moses leads Israel through the Red Sea.
Israel is delivered by the LORD.
- Ch. 15: Song of Moses.
- Ch. 16: People murmur about thirst & hunger.
(famine) Manna from heaven.
- Ch. 17: Water out of the rock.
Fight against Amalek.
Moses' hands supported.
- Ch. 18: Jethro advises Moses about judging.
- Ch. 19: Smoke of God's glory on the mountain.
- Ch. 20: Ten commandments given orally and the
people tremble. The whole mount quaked greatly.
- Ch. 21-23: Details of the judgments.
- Ch. 24: The elders see God.
The LORD tells Moses about the tables of
stone and invites him to go up, 40 days / 40 nights.
- Ch. 25: Ark of the Covenant assembly instructions.
- Ch. 26: Tabernacle assembly instructions.
- Ch. 27: Tabernacle furniture & outer court
instructions.
- Ch. 28: Aaron's priest office established
(instructions).
- Ch. 29: Consecration of the priests (instructions).
(the word "mitre")
Instructions on sacrifice.
- Ch. 30: Altar and washing instructions.
- Ch. 31: Tabernacle craftsmen and Sabbath
instructions.
Moses receives original set of tables of stone.
- Ch. 32: The people get tired of waiting on Moses
and make a golden calf with Aaron's help (Up, make
us gods). Moses appears, breaks the tables,
destroys the golden calf.
Who is on the LORD's side?
Levites execute judgment.
Moses intercedes.

2ND WITNESS (FEASTS of the LORD)

1. PASSOVER
(The old person that the Christian used to be is
symbolically buried by water baptism. Salvation
by faith rewards the believer with the presence of the
Holy Spirit in their "heart".)
2. UNLEAVENED BREAD
(The believer begins to eat the Word of God.)
3. FIRST FRUITS
(The believer begins to live as a new person,
speaking the Word in faith and showing signs of
charity and godliness.)
4. PENTECOST
(The believer experiences the baptism of the Holy
Spirit and with this power the believer shakes the
world.)
5. BLOWING OF TRUMPETS
(The believer gets the "wake-up call" that the Lord is
returning for him.)
6. DAY OF ATONEMENT
(Final preparations by the believer in order to focus
on the Lord's return.)

EXODUS & THE FEASTS

1ST WITNESS (EXODUS)

33: Moses moves the tabernacle away from the camp, cloudy pillar at tabernacle is sign for worship, every man in his tent door.

The LORD's glory revealed to Moses.

34: Moses invited up again to the mount to see the Lord's glory again and to receive the replacement tables of stone.

Feast instructions.

On the mount for 40 days / 40 nights.

Moses' face shines.

35: Moses instructs Israel on Sabbath and offerings.

36: Moses instructs Israel on service of the sanctuary and assembly thereof.

37: " tabernacle furniture.

38: " tabernacle.

39: " priestly vestments.

40: Tabernacle reared up.

Ark of the Covenant brought in.

LORD's glory fills the tabernacle.

2ND WITNESS (FEASTS of the LORD)

7. FEAST OF TABERNACLES

(Full communion with the Lord and full maturity by the believer.)

CHAPTER 16

DISCIPLESHIP

The reason the Bible was written is so that we can know the truth, by reading, studying, and believing what is written in the Bible. Some people might think: “if Jesus were here, I would hang out with him all day long.” If they don’t read their Bible, neither would they “hang out” with Jesus.

John 8:31 tells us that reading the Word of God is the same as being taught or disciplined by Jesus. In verses John 1:1 and John 1:14 it says that Jesus is the Word. The following pattern is conclusive on that.

There is major benefit in deep study of the Bible (Jeremiah 33:3). Increased revelation of the Word is a sign of deeper communion with Jesus.

DISCIPLESHIP

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 4:

¹⁸And Jesus, walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers.

¹⁹And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.

²⁰And they straightway left *their* nets, and followed him.

²¹And going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets; and he called them.

²²And they immediately left the ship and their father, and followed him.

MATTHEW 9:

⁹And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man, named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him.

MATTHEW 19:

²⁷Then answered Peter and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee; what shall we have therefore?

²⁸And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

²⁹And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive an hundredfold, and shall inherit everlasting life.

³⁰But many *that are* first shall be last; and the last *shall be* first.

LUKE 9:

⁵⁹And he said unto another, Follow me. But he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.

⁶⁰Jesus said unto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but go thou and preach the kingdom of God.

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 10:

²⁷My sheep hear my voice, and I know them,

...and they follow me:

²⁸And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any *man* pluck them out of my hand.

MATTHEW 10:

³⁷He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me.

³⁸And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.

³⁹He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it.

DISCIPLESHIP

1ST WITNESS

JOHN 6:

⁵¹ I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever:
...and the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.

MATTHEW 26:

²⁶ And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed *it*, and brake *it*, and gave *it* to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body.

JOHN 6:

⁶³ It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life.

MATTHEW 28:

¹⁸ And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.
¹⁹ Go ye therefore,

...and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:
²⁰ Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 1:

¹ In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

JOHN 1:

¹⁴ And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.

MATTHEW 4:

⁴ But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every
...word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

1 JOHN 5:

⁷ For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one.

JOHN 8:

³¹ Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him,
If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed;

MATTHEW 7:

²⁴ Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock:
²⁵ And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock.

CHAPTER 17

THE LORD'S PRAYER AND THE DOCTRINE OF CHRIST

Is it any surprise that the pattern of the Lord's prayer is a direct match with the doctrine of the principles of Christ in Hebrews 6:1-3? IT IS AN ILLUSTRATION OF WHAT OUR CHRISTIAN LIFESTYLE IS SUPPOSED TO BE.

A person receives the born again salvation experience when they confess and believe that Jesus is their Lord. (Romans 10:9-10, Acts 8:36-38, Luke 23:42-43) They become a new creation in Christ and are no longer the servant of sin (2 Corinthians 5:17, Romans 6:17-18). The old person that they used to be is buried spiritually by water baptism as a sign of repentance from the old lifestyle and a type of deliverance from evil takes place from tormenting spirits of the past. Water baptism is important because it signifies we have departed the old lifestyle forever, by choice.

The baptism of the Holy Spirit gives the believer power to overcome temptation and to not commit sin. (1 John 3:9,24; 5:18, Luke 11:13). The baptism of fire helps a person learn obedience by the things that they suffer for Christ (Matthew 3:11-12, Hebrews 5:8, 1 Peter 4:19).

John the Baptist conducted physical baptisms and Jesus conducts spiritual baptisms. This is the reason that Jesus did not perform water baptisms, only His disciples did (John 4:1-2). Jesus did not prepare the way for John's ministry but John prepared the way for Jesus (Matthew 3:1-3). Jesus does not emphasize the physical, He emphasizes the spiritual. The people were focused on physical bread and Jesus wanted them to focus on spiritual bread (John 6:63). Some denominations today focus on physical baptism and Jesus wants the focus on spiritual baptism. Has the person's heart been changed? It can only be accomplished spiritually.

John used water for baptism and Jesus uses spiritual water, which is the Holy Spirit. The Word is given and the Holy Spirit follows (Acts 1:4-5, Mark 16:15-18). Some denominations say that a person must be water baptized in order to have salvation, but this makes of none effect the blood of Jesus. Only by the shedding of Christ's blood is the remission of sin (Hebrews 9:22, 12-14, 1 John 1:7). God's grace is a gift to us so that we may have salvation (Ephesians 2:8-9, Romans 5:15-18).

Some denominations focus on water baptism and salvation and grow no further because they do not graduate to the focus on spiritual baptism. Thus, you do not see the gifts of the Holy Spirit operating in their churches, because of immaturity and unbelief (1 Corinthians 12, 14). With the gifts, there also needs to be the fruit of the Holy Spirit taking place (1 Corinthians 13, Galatians 5:22-23). Jesus said we shall know His real disciples by their fruits (Matthew 7:15-20, John 15:4-5). If there is only the gifts operating, then there is the possibility of the antichrist spirit of religion coming in and infiltrating the church. The gifts will then give way to an old wineskin of religion that puts its congregation back under the law of works and unbelief (bondage). The church eventually shrivels away and dies from thirst for living water.

In summary, a believer shows spiritual growth in the following sequence:

1. Salvation by grace because of the belief that Jesus is their personal Lord and Savior.
2. The person is now a new creation in Christ with more freedom and peace.
3. Baptism of water spiritually buries the old person, no more condemnation and guilt.
4. Baptism of the Holy Spirit gives power over sin, learns how to forgive completely.
5. Gifts of the Holy Spirit begin to operate, fruit of the Holy Spirit grows, shows more love.
6. Baptism of fire in order to learn obedience to the Lord and to grow in faith.
7. Maturity in the gifts and fruit of the Holy Spirit, walking in unconditional love and forgiveness, constant in joy through trials and tribulations, fully trusts in the Lord, miracle signs and wonders following the Word, generously gives and graciously receives.

THE LORD'S PRAYER AND THE DOCTRINE OF CHRIST

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 6:

⁹After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name.

¹⁰Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven.

¹¹Give us this day our daily bread.

2ND WITNESS

HEBREWS 6:

¹Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ,

("Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God? Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent." John 6:28-30)

...let us go on unto perfection;

("And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day. And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day." John 6:39-40)

...not laying again the foundation

("The Jews then murmured at him, because he said, I am the bread which came down from heaven. And they said, Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how is it then that he saith, I came down from heaven? Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves. No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me. Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life. I am that bread of life. Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead. This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die. I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: and the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world. The Jews therefore strove among themselves, saying, How can this man give us his flesh to eat? Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed. He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him. As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father: so he that eateth me, even he shall live by me. This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread shall live for ever. These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum." John 6:41-59)

THE LORD'S PRAYER AND THE DOCTRINE OF CHRIST

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 6:

¹² And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors.

(Dead works = unbelief and pursuit of the flesh; the penalty is unforgiven sin and eternal death.)

(Repentance should be toward the Lord, not away from Him.)

(Live works = believing in and pursuing the Lord Jesus; the reward is forgiveness of sin and eternal life.)

¹³ And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil:

(“But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance: And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire: Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.” Matthew 3:7-12)

(Nazareth – from the Hebrew word “Nazar” meaning to consecrate or separate oneself, and “eth” meaning season or time.)

(To some degree, water baptism will result in deliverance from tormenting spirits, as typified by Pharaoh's army.)

2ND WITNESS

HEBREWS 6:

¹ ...of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God,

(“Many therefore of his disciples, when they had heard this, said, This is an hard saying; who can hear it? When Jesus knew in himself that his disciples murmured at it, he said unto them, Doth this offend you? What and if ye shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before? It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life. But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who should betray him. And he said, Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father. From that time many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him. Then said Jesus unto the twelve, Will ye also go away? Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life. And we believe and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God.”

John 6:60-69)

² Of the doctrine of baptisms,

(“Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil? He spake of Judas Iscariot the son of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.”

John 6:70-71)

(“In the last day, that great day of the feast (TABERNACLES), Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. (But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet given; because that Jesus was not yet glorified.) Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said, Of a truth this is the Prophet. Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee? (SOURCE OF ISRAEL'S WATER) Hath not the scripture said, That Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem (HOUSE OF BREAD), where David was?”

John 7:37-42)

(“Then sang Moses and the children of Israel this song unto the LORD, and spake, saying, I will sing unto the LORD, for he hath triumphed gloriously: the horse and his rider hath he thrown into the sea... For the horse of Pharaoh went in with his chariots and with his horsemen into the sea, and the LORD brought again the waters of the sea upon them; but the children of Israel went on dry land in the midst of the sea.”

Exodus 15:1, 19)

THE LORD'S PRAYER AND THE DOCTRINE OF CHRIST

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 6:

¹³...For thine is the kingdom,

(You cannot take God's Kingdom, you must receive it!)

(Prophecies of the coming impartation of the Holy Spirit.)

(The Holy Spirit is representative of the kingdom.)

(The baptism of the Holy Spirit is received by those who are prepared and want to receive Him. It can take place by the laying on of believer's hands.)

(An ordination by the laying on of hands is performed by the elders upon a believer who is called into the ministry, and the kingdom is multiplied, by the power of the Holy Spirit.)

(Another example of the laying on of hands upon believers in order to send them forth to multiply the kingdom.)

HEBREWS 6:

²...and of laying on of hands,

("Then they sought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, because his hour was not yet come. And many of the people believed on him, and said, When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than these which this man hath done? The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him; and the Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to take him."
John 7:30-32)

("He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. (But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet given; because that Jesus was not yet glorified.)"
John 7:38-39)

("For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence."
Acts 1:5)

("...Paul having passed through the upper coasts came to Ephesus: and finding certain disciples, He said unto them, Have ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed? And they said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any Holy Ghost. And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Unto John's baptism. Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus. When they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the Holy Ghost came on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied."
Acts 19:1b-6)

("Wherefore, brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business. But we will give ourselves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the word. And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch: Whom they set before the apostles: and when they had prayed, they laid their hands on them. And the word of God increased; and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith."
Acts 6:1-7)

("Now there were in the church that was at Antioch certain prophets and teachers; as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and Saul. As they ministered to the Lord, and fasted, the Holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them. And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they sent them away."
Acts 13:1-3)

THE LORD'S PRAYER AND THE DOCTRINE OF CHRIST

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 6:

¹³...and the power, and the glory,

("Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life;"
John 5:28-29a)

("Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life;"
John 5:28-29a)

("Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life;"
John 5:28-29a)

("Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life;"
John 5:28-29a)

("...and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation." John 5:29b) (the second resurrection)

2ND WITNESS

HEBREWS 6:

².....and of resurrection of the dead,

("That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death; If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead." Philipians 3:10-11)

("Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this? ...Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that, if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God? Then they took away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me. And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by I said it, that they may believe that thou hast sent me. And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with graveclothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go." John 11:25-26, 40-44)

("But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the firstfruits of them that slept. For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming. Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. ...So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body." 1 Corinthians 15:20-24, 42-44)

("But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years. ...And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire." Revelation 20:5-6, 11-15)

THE LORD'S PRAYER AND THE DOCTRINE OF CHRIST

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 6:
13 ... for ever.

...Amen.

2ND WITNESS

HEBREWS 6:
2...and of eternal judgment.

(“And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment.” Hebrews 9:27)

(“For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad. Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we persuade men; but we are made manifest unto God; and I trust also are made manifest in your consciences.”

2 Corinthians 5:10-11)

(“But why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set at nought thy brother? for we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ. For it is written, As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God. So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God. Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge this rather, that no man put a stumbling block or an occasion to fall in his brother's way.”

Romans 14:10-12)

³And this will we do, if God permit.

CHAPTER 18

MICAH 5 & JEREMIAH 5

While sitting in the backyard one evening and looking up at the sky, the Lord put it into the author's heart to review these two Bible chapters for a pattern. It happened just like that: out of the blue.

In studying the "Jeremiah 5" column, what becomes quickly apparent is that the subject matter concerns the judgment of Israel. Whenever we see "Israel" in this context, we can also substitute "spiritual Israel" or "the Church" in its place. Both "Israel" and "spiritual Israel" can apply here.

"For the time *is come* that judgment must begin at the house of God: and if *it first begin* at us,
what shall the end *be* of them that obey not the gospel of God?" 1 Peter 4:17

The subject matter of the "Micah 5" column is very intriguing. Verse two is the prophecy concerning the birth of Jesus in Bethlehem. The remainder of the chapter concerns Israel in the last days. It appears that during the period of tribulation and the invasion of Israel, the Lord brings forth a remnant "through the fire". He will use this remnant to execute judgment upon the enemies of Israel; namely, the land of Assyria and the land of Nimrod. This area of the Middle East is primarily composed of Islamic Arabs. There is the specific mention of seven shepherds and eight principal men (verse five) in the leadership of the remnant. It is possible that this remnant is associated with the 144,000.

MICAH 5 & JEREMIAH 5

1ST WITNESS

MICAH 5:

¹Now gather thyself in troops, O daughter of troops: he hath laid siege against us: they shall smite the judge of Israel

...with a rod upon the cheek.

²But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah*, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, ...yet out of thee shall he come forth unto me *that is* to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth *have been* from of old, from everlasting.

³Therefore will he give them up, until the time that she which travaileth hath brought forth:

...then the remnant of his brethren shall return unto the children of Israel.

(*Ephratah = Strong's 672, another name for Bethlehem. Ref. 1 Chron. 4:4 – father of Bethlehem)

2ND WITNESS

JEREMIAH 5:

¹Run ye to and fro through the streets of Jerusalem, and see now, and know, and seek in the broad places thereof, if ye can find a man, if there be *any* that executeth judgment, that seeketh the truth; and I will pardon it.

²And though they say, The LORD liveth; surely they swear falsely.

³O LORD, *are* not thine eyes upon the truth? thou hast stricken them, but they have not grieved; thou hast consumed them, *but* they have refused to receive correction: they have made their faces harder than a rock; they have refused to return.

⁴Therefore I said, Surely these are poor; they are foolish: for they know not the way of the LORD, *nor* the judgment of their God.

⁵I will get me unto the great men, and will speak unto them; for they have known the way of the LORD, *and* the judgment of their God: but these have altogether broken the yoke, *and* burst the bonds.

⁶Wherefore a lion out of the forest shall slay them, *and* a wolf of the evenings shall spoil them, a leopard shall watch over their cities: every one that goeth out thence shall be torn in pieces: because their transgressions are many, *and* their backslidings are increased.

⁷How shall I pardon thee for this? thy children have forsaken me, and sworn by *them that are* no gods: when I had fed them to the full, they then committed adultery, and assembled themselves by troops in the harlots' houses.

⁸They were as fed horses in the morning: every one neighed after his neighbour's wife.

⁹Shall I not visit for these *things*? saith the LORD: and shall not my soul be avenged on such a nation as this?

MICAH 5 & JEREMIAH 5

1ST WITNESS

MICAH 5:

⁴And he shall stand and feed in the strength of the LORD, in the majesty of the name of the LORD his God; and they shall abide: for now shall he be great unto the ends of the earth.

⁵And this *man* shall be the peace, when the Assyrian shall come into our land:

and when he shall tread in our palaces, then shall we raise against him seven shepherds, and eight principal men.

⁶And they shall waste the land of Assyria with the sword, and the land of Nimrod in the entrances thereof: thus shall he deliver us from the Assyrian, when he cometh into our land, and when he treadeth within our borders.

⁷And the remnant of Jacob shall be in the midst of many people as a dew from the LORD, as the showers upon the grass, that tarrieth not for man, nor waiteth for the sons of men.

2ND WITNESS

JEREMIAH 5:

¹⁰Go ye up upon her walls, and destroy; but make not a full end: take away her battlements; for they *are* not the LORD'S.

¹¹For the house of Israel and the house of Judah have dealt very treacherously against me, saith the LORD.

¹²They have belied the LORD, and said, *It is* not he; neither shall evil come upon us; neither shall we see sword nor famine:

¹³And the prophets shall become wind, and the word *is* not in them: thus shall it be done unto them.

¹⁴Wherefore thus saith the LORD God of hosts, Because ye speak this word, behold, I will make my words in thy mouth fire, and this people wood, and it shall devour them.

¹⁵Lo, I will bring a nation upon you from far, O house of Israel, saith the LORD: it *is* a mighty nation, it *is* an ancient nation, a nation whose language thou knowest not, neither understandest what they say.

¹⁶Their quiver *is* as an open sepulchre, they *are* all mighty men.

¹⁷And they shall eat up thine harvest, and thy bread, *which* thy sons and thy daughters should eat: they shall eat up thy flocks and thine herds: they shall eat up thy vines and thy fig trees: they shall impoverish thy fenced cities, wherein thou trustedst, with the sword.

¹⁸Nevertheless in those days, saith the LORD, I will not make a full end with you.

¹⁹And it shall come to pass, when ye shall say, Wherefore doeth the LORD our God all these *things* unto us? then shalt thou answer them, Like as ye have forsaken me, and served strange gods in your land, so shall ye serve strangers in a land that is not yours.

MICAH 5 & JEREMIAH 5

1ST WITNESS

MICAH 5:

⁸And the remnant of Jacob

...shall be among the Gentiles in the midst of many people as a lion among the beasts of the forest, as a young lion among the flocks of sheep: who, if he go through, both treadeth down, and teareth in pieces, and none can deliver.

⁹Thine hand shall be lifted up upon thine adversaries, and all thine enemies shall be cut off.

¹⁰And it shall come to pass in that day, saith the LORD, that I will cut off thy horses out of the midst of thee, and I will destroy thy chariots:

¹¹And I will cut off the cities of thy land, and throw down all thy strong holds:

¹²And I will cut off witchcrafts out of thine hand; and thou shalt have no *more* soothsayers:

¹³Thy graven images also will I cut off, and thy standing images out of the midst of thee; and thou shalt no more worship the work of thine hands.

¹⁴And I will pluck up thy groves out of the midst of thee: so will I destroy thy cities.

¹⁵And I will execute vengeance in anger and fury upon the heathen, such as they have not heard.

2ND WITNESS

JEREMIAH 5:

²⁰Declare this in the house of Jacob, and publish it in Judah, saying,

²¹Hear now this, O foolish people, and without understanding; which have eyes, and see not; which have ears, and hear not:

²²Fear ye not me? saith the LORD: will ye not tremble at my presence, which have placed the sand *for* the bound of the sea by a perpetual decree, that it cannot pass it: and though the waves thereof toss themselves, yet can they not prevail; though they roar, yet can they not pass over it?

²³But this people hath a revolting and a rebellious heart; they are revolted and gone.

²⁴Neither say they in their heart, Let us now fear the LORD our God, that giveth rain, both the former and the latter, in his season: he reserveth unto us the appointed weeks of the harvest.

²⁵Your iniquities have turned away these *things*, and your sins have withholden good *things* from you.

²⁶For among my people are found wicked *men*: they lay wait, as he that setteth snares; they set a trap, they catch men.

²⁷As a cage is full of birds, so *are* their houses full of deceit: therefore they are become great, and waxen rich.

²⁸They are waxen fat, they shine: yea, they overpass the deeds of the wicked: they judge not the cause, the cause of the fatherless, yet they prosper; and the right of the needy do they not judge.

²⁹Shall I not visit for these *things*? saith the LORD:

...shall not my soul be avenged on such a nation as this?

³⁰A wonderful and horrible thing is committed in the land;

³¹The prophets prophesy falsely, and the priests bear rule by their means; and my people love *to have it so*: and what will ye do in the end thereof?

CHAPTER 19

REVELATION 5 & REVELATION 10

The pattern match-up between the two Bible chapters Revelation 5 and 10, reveals that the Book of Revelation is God's title deed to the earth. This correlates with Psalm 24; specifically, the first verse:

- ¹The earth *is* the LORD'S, and the fulness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein.
- ²For he hath founded it upon the seas, and established it upon the floods.
- ³Who shall ascend into the hill of the LORD? or who shall stand in his holy place?
- ⁴He that hath clean hands, and a pure heart; who hath not lifted up his soul unto vanity, nor sworn deceitfully.
- ⁵He shall receive the blessing from the LORD, and righteousness from the God of his salvation.
- ⁶This *is* the generation of them that seek him, that seek thy face, O Jacob.
Selah
- ⁷Lift up your heads, O ye gates; and be ye lift up, ye everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in.
- ⁸Who *is* this King of glory? The LORD strong and mighty, the LORD mighty in battle.
- ⁹Lift up your heads, O ye gates; even lift *them* up, ye everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in.
- ¹⁰Who *is* this King of glory? The LORD of hosts, he *is* the King of glory.
Selah

The entire Psalm 24 is included here because it illustrates additional insight concerning the pattern in Revelation 5 and 10.

Revelation 5:2 asks: "Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof?"

Revelation 5:5 says that "the Lion of the tribe of Juda" opens the book because He has "prevailed". How did Jesus prevail? His sacrifice at the cross is how He prevailed. Psalm 24 illustrates this in detail because it shows the victory of his resurrection. Psalms 22, 23, and 24 are prophetic and are about Jesus:

- Psalm 22: His crucifixion.
- Psalm 23: His death.
- Psalm 24: His resurrection.

The Book of Revelation is "sealed" until the time of the end (Rev. 10:4). As Jesus begins unsealing the book in the last days, the trial, death, and resurrection of the Body of Christ occur (Great Tribulation); at the end of which, Jesus takes possession of the earth. Then an amazing thing happens. Jesus gives the book to His servants because "(Jesus) hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth." This inheritance is so awesome that it is incomprehensible with the carnal mind.

One final note; even though the seven thunders are part of the pattern, they remain sealed.

REVELATION 5 & REVELATION 10

1ST WITNESS

REVELATION 5:

¹And I saw in the right hand of
...him that sat on the throne
...a book written within and on the backside, sealed
with seven seals.

²And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with
...a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and
to loose the seals thereof?

³And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under
the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look
thereon.

⁴And I wept much, because no man was found worthy
to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon.

⁵And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not:
behold, the Lion of the tribe of Juda, the Root of
David, hath prevailed to open the book,

...and to loose the seven seals thereof.

⁶And I beheld, and, lo, in the midst of the throne and
of the four beasts, and in the midst of the elders,

...stood a Lamb as it had been slain, having seven
horns and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of
God sent forth into all the earth.

⁷And he came and took the book out of the right hand
of him that sat upon the throne.

⁸And when he had taken the book,

...the four beasts and four and twenty elders fell
down before the Lamb, having every one of them
harps, and golden vials full of odours, which are the
prayers of saints.

2ND WITNESS

REVELATION 10:

¹And I saw another
...mighty angel come down from heaven,
...clothed with a cloud: and a rainbow was upon his
head, and his face was as it were the sun, and his
feet as pillars of fire:

²And he had in his hand a little book open: and he set
his right foot upon the sea, and *his* left *foot* on the
earth,

³And cried with a loud voice,

...as *when* a lion roareth: and when he had cried,
seven thunders uttered their voices.

⁴And when the seven thunders had uttered their
voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from
heaven saying unto me, Seal up those things which
the seven thunders uttered, and write them not.

⁵And the angel which I saw stand upon the sea and
upon the earth lifted up his hand to heaven,

⁶And swore by him that liveth for ever and ever, who
created heaven, and the things that therein are, and
the earth, and the things that therein are, and the
sea, and the things which are therein, that there
should be time no longer:

⁷But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel,
when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God
should be finished, as he hath declared to his
servants the prophets.

REVELATION 5 & REVELATION 10

1ST WITNESS

REVELATION 5:

⁹And they sung a new song,

...saying, Thou art worthy to take the book,
...and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain,
and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of
every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation;

¹⁰And hast made us unto our God kings and priests:
and we shall reign on the earth.

¹¹And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels
round about the throne and the beasts and the
elders: and the number of them was ten thousand
times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands;

¹²Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that
was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom,
and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.

¹³And every creature which is in heaven, and
...on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are
in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying,
Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power, *be* unto
him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb
for ever and ever.

¹⁴And the four beasts said, Amen. And the four *and*
twenty elders fell down and worshipped him that
liveth for ever and ever.

2ND WITNESS

REVELATION 10:

⁸And the voice which I heard from heaven spake unto
me again,

...and said, Go *and* take the little book
...which is open in the hand of the angel which
standeth upon
...the sea and upon the earth.

⁹And I went unto the angel, and said unto him,
Give me the little book. And he said unto me, Take *it*,
and eat it up; and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it
shall be in thy mouth sweet as honey.

¹⁰And I took the little book out of the angel's hand,
and ate it up; and it was in my mouth sweet as honey:
and as soon as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

¹¹And he said unto me, Thou must prophesy again

...before many peoples, and nations, and tongues,
and kings.

CHAPTER 20

EXODUS 19-20 & REVELATION 4-5

The pattern match-up between Exodus 19-20 and Revelation 4-5 is a contrast of two lifestyles or two mindsets.

Exodus 19-20 is for the immature person who focuses on the physical aspect of life and consequently, is focused on keeping the law and is limited to present reality. His relationship with God is somewhat distant and fearful of judgment.

Revelation 4-5 is an illustration of the lifestyle of the mature believer who prefers the spiritual existence of living a life for God, according to the leading of the Holy Spirit, and is rewarded with the revelation of who God is and what the future brings. Thus, they not only live in a present reality but in a past and future dimension, which is more like the Lord: who was, and is, and is to come; the Alpha and the Omega; the first and the last. There is no time in the spirit world.

The comparison of the glory of the Lord is similar because it represents the One who is the same yesterday, today, and forever.

EXODUS 19-20 & REVELATION 4-5

1ST WITNESS

EXODUS 19:

¹In the third month, when the children of Israel were gone forth out of the land of Egypt, the same day came they *into* the wilderness of Sinai.

²For they were departed from Rephidim, and were come *to* the desert of Sinai, and had pitched in the wilderness; and there Israel camped before the mount.

³And Moses went up unto God, and the LORD called unto him out of the mountain, saying, Thus shalt thou say to the house of Jacob, and tell the children of Israel;

⁴Ye have seen what I did unto the Egyptians, and *how* I bare you on eagles' wings, and brought you unto myself.

⁵Now therefore, if ye will obey my voice indeed, and keep my covenant, then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto me above all people: for all the earth *is* mine:

⁶And ye shall be unto me a kingdom of priests, and an holy nation. These *are* the words which thou shalt speak unto the children of Israel.

⁷And Moses came and called for the elders of the people, and laid before their faces all these words which the LORD commanded him.

⁸And all the people answered together, and said, All that the LORD hath spoken we will do. And Moses returned the words of the people unto the LORD.

⁹And the LORD said unto Moses, Lo, I come unto thee in a thick cloud, that the people may hear when I speak with thee, and believe thee for ever. And Moses told the words of the people unto the LORD.

¹⁰And the LORD said unto Moses, Go unto the people, and sanctify them to day and to morrow, and let them wash their clothes,

¹¹And be ready against the third day: for the third day the LORD will come down in the sight of all the people upon mount Sinai.

¹²And thou shalt set bounds unto the people round about, saying, Take heed to yourselves, *that ye go not* up into the mount, or touch the border of it: whosoever toucheth the mount shall be surely put to death:

¹³There shall not an hand touch it, but he shall surely be stoned, or shot through; whether *it be* beast or man, it shall not live: when the trumpet soundeth long, they shall come up to the mount.

¹⁴And Moses went down from the mount unto the people, and sanctified the people; and they washed their clothes.

¹⁵And he said unto the people, Be ready against the third day: come not at *your* wives.

2ND WITNESS

REVELATION 4:

(← *parallel with Revelation 12:14*)

EXODUS 19-20 & REVELATION 4-5

1ST WITNESS

EXODUS 19:

¹⁶And it came to pass on the third day in the morning, that there were thunders and lightnings, and a thick cloud upon the mount, and the voice of the trumpet exceeding loud; so that all the people that was in the camp trembled.

¹⁷And Moses brought forth the people out of the camp to meet with God; and they stood at the nether part of the mount.

¹⁸And mount Sinai was altogether on a smoke, because the LORD descended upon it in fire: and the smoke thereof ascended as the smoke of a furnace, and the whole mount quaked greatly.

¹⁹And when the voice of the trumpet sounded long, and waxed louder and louder, Moses spake, and God answered him by a voice.

²⁰And the LORD came down upon mount Sinai, on the top of the mount: and the LORD called Moses up to the top of the mount; and Moses went up.

²¹And the LORD said unto Moses, Go down, charge the people, lest they break through unto the LORD to gaze, and many of them perish.

²²And let the priests also, which come near to the LORD, sanctify themselves, lest the LORD break forth upon them.

2ND WITNESS

REVELATION 4:

¹After this I looked, and, behold, a door was opened in heaven: and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me;

(← *corresponding future earthquake?*)

...which said, Come up hither, and I will show thee things which must be hereafter.

²And immediately I was in the spirit: and, behold, a throne was set in heaven, and one sat on the throne.

³And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and there was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald.

⁴And round about the throne were four and twenty seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold.

⁵And out of the throne proceeded lightnings and thunderings and voices: and there were seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven Spirits of God.

⁶And before the throne there was a sea of glass like unto crystal: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, were four beasts full of eyes before and behind.

⁷And the first beast was like a lion, and the second beast like a calf, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast was like a flying eagle.

⁸And the four beasts had each of them six wings about him; and they were full of eyes within: and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.

EXODUS 19-20 & REVELATION 4-5

1ST WITNESS

EXODUS 19:

²³And Moses said unto the LORD, The people cannot come up to mount Sinai: for thou chargedst us, saying, Set bounds about the mount, and sanctify it.

²⁴And the LORD said unto him, Away, get thee down, and thou shalt come up, thou, and Aaron with thee: but let not the priests and the people break through to come up unto the LORD, lest he break forth upon them.

²⁵So Moses went down unto the people, and spake unto them.

EXODUS 20:

¹And God spake all these words, saying,

²I am the LORD thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.

(The Ten Commandments)

³Thou shalt have no other gods before me.

⁴Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of *any thing* that *is* in heaven above, or that *is* in the earth beneath, or that *is* in the water under the earth:

⁵Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God *am* a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth *generation* of them that hate me;

⁶And showing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments.

⁷Thou shalt not take the name of the LORD thy God in vain; for the LORD will not hold him guiltless that taketh his name in vain.

2ND WITNESS

REVELATION 4:

⁹And when those beasts give glory and honour and thanks to him that sat on the throne, who liveth for ever and ever,

¹⁰The four and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying,

¹¹Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.

REVELATION 5:

¹And I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne **a book** written within and on the backside, sealed with seven seals.

²And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open **the book**, and to loose the seals thereof?

³And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open **the book**, neither to look thereon.

⁴And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read **the book**, neither to look thereon.

⁵And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Juda, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open **the book**, and to loose the seven seals thereof.

⁶And I beheld, and, lo, in the midst of the throne and of the four beasts, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as it had been slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God sent forth into all the earth.

⁷And he came and took **the book** out of the right hand of him that sat upon the throne.

("the book" = The Book of Revelation)

EXODUS 19-20 & REVELATION 4-5

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

EXODUS 20:

⁸Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy.

⁹Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work:

¹⁰But the seventh day *is* the sabbath of the LORD thy God: *in it* thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that *is* within thy gates:

¹¹For *in* six days the LORD made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them *is*, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it.

¹²Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee.

¹³Thou shalt not kill.

¹⁴Thou shalt not commit adultery.

¹⁵Thou shalt not steal.

¹⁶Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour.

¹⁷Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor any thing that *is* thy neighbour's.

¹⁸And all the people saw the thunderings, and the lightnings, and the noise of the trumpet, and the mountain smoking: and when the people saw it, they removed, and stood afar off.

¹⁹And they said unto Moses, Speak thou with us, and we will hear: but let not God speak with us, lest we die.

²⁰And Moses said unto the people, Fear not: for God is come to prove you, and that his fear may be before your faces, that ye sin not.

²¹And the people stood afar off, and Moses drew near unto the thick darkness where God was.

REVELATION 5:

⁸And when he had taken the book, the four beasts and four and twenty elders fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of odours,

...which are the prayers of saints.

⁹And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation;

¹⁰And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth.

EXODUS 19-20 & REVELATION 4-5

1ST WITNESS

EXODUS 20:

²²And the LORD said unto Moses, Thus thou shalt say unto the children of Israel, Ye have seen that I have talked with you from heaven.

²³Ye shall not make with me gods of silver, neither shall ye make unto you gods of gold.

²⁴An altar of earth thou shalt make unto me,

...and shalt sacrifice thereon thy burnt offerings, and thy peace offerings, thy sheep, and thine oxen: in all places where I record my name I will come unto thee, and I will bless thee.

²⁵And if thou wilt make me an altar of stone, thou shalt not build it of hewn stone: for if thou lift up thy tool upon it, thou hast polluted it.

²⁶Neither shalt thou go up by steps unto mine altar, that thy nakedness be not discovered thereon.

2ND WITNESS

REVELATION 5:

¹¹And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne and the beasts and the elders: and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands;

¹²Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.

¹³And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever.

¹⁴And the four beasts said, Amen. And the four *and* twenty elders fell down and worshipped him that liveth for ever and ever.

CHAPTER 21

EXODUS - REVELATION PLAGUES & JESUS

The following Bible pattern is really quite amazing. To see the spiritual big picture is at the pinnacle of revelation of the deeper things of God. The pattern illustrates a match-up between three Bible events:

- the plagues of judgment from the book of Exodus,
- the plagues of judgment from the book of Revelation,
- the sequence of events from the gospels of the betrayal, crucifixion, death, and resurrection of Jesus

The seven plagues of Revelation have their counterparts with most of the ten plagues of Exodus. Several plagues of Exodus have no apparent counterparts with Revelation but the pattern match-up with the gospels reveals the deeper meaning of these plagues. (Refer also to Chapter 41 of the first volume of The Two Witnesses) Below is a table summary of the match-up.

Exodus Plague #	Revelation Plague #
0	1
1	2
2	3
3	-
Goshen	-
4	4
5	-
6	5
7	-
8	6
9	-
Passover	Rapture
10	7

An ominous revelation is that the king of the chief priests of the temple is the fallen angel Abaddon / Apollyon.

Jesus was crucified, garments parted, buried, resurrected, ascended, and afterwards came Pentecost for the 120 of the upper room and for others. Israel will be crucified, plundered, buried, resurrected, and ascended with a latter-rain Pentecost for the 144,000 (12x12x1000) and for others!

The next two pages contain a table illustrating the comparisons of the plagues, followed by eleven pages of the Bible pattern for the Exodus-Revelation-Gospels scriptures.

This pattern, as with most, provides a deeper revelation of who Jesus is spiritually. Ultimate revelation is to know God, which appropriately is the subject of the last chapter (pinnacle) of the book of Revelation.

EXODUS - REVELATION PLAGUES AND JESUS

Exodus Plague #	Exodus Verse:	Exodus Scripture:	Revelation Plague #	Revelation Verse:	Revelation Scripture:	Gospel Verse:	Gospel Scripture:
0	7:10,12	Moses rod cast down and it swallows the other two	1	8:7	Hail and fire mingled with blood are cast down upon the earth	Luke 22:3 Matt. 27:4-5	Satan enters into Judas, he betrays innocent blood and afterwards he casts down the 30 pieces of silver
				16:2	1st vial poured upon earth, a grievous sore on those with the mark	Acts 1:17-18	Judas was numbered with the disciples and committed suicide by falling on a sword and all his bowels gushed out
1	7:20	The river is turned into blood	2	8:8	A great mountain burning with fire is cast into the sea, turning it to blood	John 13:26-27	When Jesus dips the sop, he gives it to Judas and Satan enters into him
				16:3	The sea becomes as the blood of a dead man, every soul living dies in the sea		
2	8:5, 14	Frogs come out of the streams, rivers, ponds, and upon the land of Egypt, causing it to stink	3	8:10-11	A great burning star falls upon 1/3 part of rivers, fresh water becomes wormwood, many die from bitter waters	John 13:2,5,10,11	Supper is ended, the devil is now in the heart of Judas, then Jesus pours water to wash the disciples feet, including Judas "Ye are not all clean" (Judas defiled the water)
				16:4	Rivers and fresh water become blood		
3	8:16, 19	The dust is smitten and it becomes lice through out all the land of Egypt				Matt. 26:31	Jesus the shepherd is smitten and the flock is scattered abroad.
Goshen	8:22	God's people protected in the land of Goshen.				John 14:2 John 18:8	Jesus: I go to prepare a place for you Jesus: I am he, let the others go
4	8:24	A grievous swarm of flies (as a dark cloud) corrupts the land	4	8:12	1/3 part of sun / moon / stars darkened and shone not for 1/3 of the day/night	Matt. 26:47 Luke 22:53	Judas arrives with a great multitude to arrest Jesus, since this is their hour and the power of darkness
				16:8-9	The sun scorches men with great heat and they blaspheme	Matt. 26:64-66	Jesus speaks fire to the religious people and they blaspheme
5	9:3	A very grievous murrain hits the livestock				Matt. 27:1-2 John 18:28 Heb. 10:11-12 Jer. 33:15-18	The religious people take Jesus to the Roman judgment hall but they do not enter in because they don't want to be defiled for passover Animal sacrifices by religious people are not acceptable righteousness, especially when the same people are conspiring to kill someone (hypocrisy)

EXODUS - REVELATION PLAGUES AND JESUS

Exodus Plague #	Exodus Verse:	Exodus Scripture:	Revelation Plague #	Revelation Verse:	Revelation Scripture:	Gospel Verse:	Gospel Scripture:
6	9:10	Moses sprinkles furnace ashes upwards and it darkens the air, then boils break forth upon man and beast	5	9:2-10 16:10-11	Bottomless pit is opened and smoke as a furnace darkens the air, then locusts come forth and torment the sinners, the king of the locusts is Abaddon/Apolloyon The beast's kingdom is full of darkness, pain, and blasphemy	John 19:6-7, 11, 15	The religious people tell Pilate that Jesus should die because he made himself the Son of God; Jesus says the religious leaders have the greater sin (and are destined for eternal pain); the chief priests say their king is Caesar
7	9:24-26	Hail with fire smites all the land of Egypt				Luke 23:27-31	On the way to the cross, Jesus prophesies that they shall begin to say to the mountains: fall on us and cover us
8	10:13-15	The east wind brings locusts that darken the land and eat up all the green plant life	6	9:13-16,18 16:12-14	Army of 200 million horsemen to slay 1/3 of men by fire, smoke, brimstone Euphrates river dries up for the kings of the east, 3 unclean frog spirits come out of the mouths	Matt. 27:39-40 Matt. 27:41-42	Passers-by tell Jesus to come down from the cross if he is the Son of God The chief priests tell Jesus to come down from the cross and they will believe him
9	10:21-22	A plague of darkness over Egypt for 3 days, so thick it could be felt				Mark 15:33 Matt. 12:40	While Jesus is on the cross, darkness comes over the land for 3 hours As Jonah was 3 days & nights in the whale's belly so shall Jesus be in the heart of the earth
Passover	12:7,12-13	Blood is applied on the door posts so the plague passes over God's people	Rapture	10:1-4 10:5-9 16:15	A mighty angel comes down from heaven and cries with a loud voice Time is no longer; the mystery is finished, behold I come as a thief	Heb. 9:12 Mark 14:24 Mark 15:34-35 John 19:28-29 Matt. 27:49	By his own blood the price was paid, the blood of the new testament; Jesus cries with a loud voice All things are now accomplished; the people watching Jesus on the cross say "let us see if Elijah will come and save him"
10	12:29-30	At midnight the first-born are smitten and a great cry goes forth in Egypt	7	16:16-21 19:19-21	Gathered at a place called Armageddon, a great voice says "it is done", voices/thunder/lightning, a great earthquake and great hail, the beast and false prophet are defeated	John 19:30 Matt. 27:50-51 John 19:34 1John 5:8 Heb. 2:14	Jesus drinks the vinegar and cries aloud: "it is finished", the veil of the temple splits in two, the earth quakes, Jesus dies and wins the spiritual battle of Armageddon and defeats the devil who had the power of death

EXODUS - REVELATION PLAGUES & JESUS

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

EXODUS 7:

¹⁰...cast down his rod before
Pharaoh
...and it became a serpent.
¹²...swallowed up their rods.

(To no longer be numbered with the
Lord... >>

...is to inherit the devil's mark of
ownership.) >>

EXODUS 7:

²⁰...all the waters that were in the
river were turned to blood.
(Nile River)

REVELATION 8:

⁷...hail and fire mingled with blood

...cast upon the earth ...grass was
burnt up.

REVELATION 16:

²...poured out his vial upon the
earth ...grievous sore upon the men
which had the mark of the beast...

REVELATION 8:8

⁸...a great mountain ...into the sea
...third part of the sea became
blood.

Revelation 16:3

³...the sea ...it became as the
blood of a dead man:

...and every living soul died in the
sea.

LUKE 22:

³Then entered Satan into Judas
surnamed Iscariot, being of the
number of the twelve.

MATTHEW 27:

⁴Saying, I have sinned in that
I have betrayed the innocent blood.
And they said, What *is that* to us?
see thou *to that*.

⁵And he cast down the pieces of
silver in the temple, and departed,
and went and hanged himself.

ACTS 1:

¹⁷For he was numbered with us...

¹⁸Now this man purchased a field
with the reward of iniquity;
...and falling headlong,
he burst asunder in the midst, and
all his bowels gushed out.

JOHN 13:

²⁶Jesus answered, **He it is, to whom
I shall give a sop, when I have
dipped it.** And

...when he had dipped the sop,

...he gave *it* to Judas Iscariot, the
son of Simon.

²⁷And after the sop

...Satan entered into him.

Then said Jesus unto him, **That thou
doest, do quickly.**

EXODUS - REVELATION PLAGUES & JESUS

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

EXODUS 8:

⁵...over the streams ...rivers
...ponds

...cause frogs to come upon the
land of Egypt.

¹⁴...the land stank.

¹⁶...smite the dust of the land,

...that it may become lice
throughout all the land of Egypt.

¹⁹...This *is* the finger of God...

REVELATION 8:

¹⁰...a great star ...burning

...fell upon the third part of the rivers
...fountains of waters

¹¹...became wormwood
...many men died
...because they were made bitter.

REVELATION 16:

⁴...the rivers and the fountains of
waters ...became blood.

JOHN 13:

²And supper being ended,
the devil having now put into the
heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son,
to betray him;

⁵After that he poureth water into a
basin, and began to wash the
disciples' feet, and to wipe *them*
with the towel wherewith he was
girded.

*(Pontius Pilate washes his hands.
Matt. 27:24)*

¹⁰Jesus saith to him, **He that is
washed needeth not save to wash
his feet, but is clean every whit: and
ye are clean, but not all.**

¹¹For he knew who should betray
him; therefore said he,

...**Ye are not all clean.**

*(Jews claim the blood of Jesus.
Matt. 27:25)*

MATTHEW 26:

³¹Then saith Jesus unto them,
**All ye shall be offended because of
me this night: for it is written,
I will smite the shepherd,**

*(Jesus smitten with a reed and then
crucified. Matt. 27:30, 35)*

...**and the sheep of the flock shall be
...scattered abroad.**

*(They part the garments of Jesus.
Symbolic for the people of Israel being
divided up and scattered abroad after
the destruction of the temple.
Matt. 27:35)*

EXODUS - REVELATION PLAGUES & JESUS

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

EXODUS 8:

²²...I will sever in that day the land of Goshen, in which my people dwell,

...that no swarms of flies shall be there;

...to the end thou mayest know that I am the LORD in the midst of the earth.

JOHN 17:

¹²While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled.

¹³And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves.

¹⁴I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

¹⁵I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil.

JOHN 14:

²In my Father's house are many mansions: if *it were not so*, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you.

JOHN 18:

⁸Jesus answered, I have told you

(“you” = Judas, the band of men, and the officers)

...that I am he: if therefore ye seek me, let these go their way:

⁹That the saying might be fulfilled, which he spake, Of them which thou gavest me have I lost none.

EXODUS - REVELATION PLAGUES & JESUS

1ST WITNESS

EXODUS 8:

²⁴...a grievous swarm of flies
(as a dark cloud) ...the land was corrupted...

2ND WITNESS

REVELATION 8:

¹²...the third part of the sun ...moon
...stars ...darkened ...the day (*and night*) shone not for a third part of it...

REVELATION 16:

⁸...the sun ...power was given unto him to scorch men with fire.

⁹...men were scorched with great heat,

...and blasphemed the name of God, which hath power over these plagues:
...and they repented not to give him glory.

3RD WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

⁴⁷And while he yet spake, lo, Judas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and elders of the people.

LUKE 22:

⁵³*When I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched forth no hands against me: but this is your hour, and the power of darkness.*

MATTHEW 26:

⁶⁴Jesus saith unto him, *Thou hast said: nevertheless I say unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.*

⁶⁵Then the high priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy; what further need have we of witnesses? behold, now ye have heard his blasphemy.

⁶⁶What think ye? They answered and said, He is guilty of death.

EXODUS - REVELATION PLAGUES & JESUS

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

EXODUS 9:

³...the hand of the LORD is upon thy cattle which *is* in the field, upon the horses, upon the asses, upon the camels, upon the oxen, and upon the sheep: *there shall be* a very grievous murrain.

MATTHEW 27:

¹When the morning was come, all the chief priests and elders of the people took counsel against Jesus to put him to death:

²And when they had bound him, they led *him* away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor.

JOHN 18:

²⁸...and they themselves went not into the judgment hall, lest they should be defiled; but that they might eat the passover.

HEBREWS 10:

¹¹And every priest standeth daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins:

¹²But this man (*Jesus*), after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God;

JEREMIAH 33:

¹⁵In those days, and at that time, will I cause the Branch of righteousness (*Jesus*) to grow up unto David; and he shall execute judgment and righteousness in the land.

¹⁶In those days shall Judah be saved, and Jerusalem shall dwell safely: and this *is the name* wherewith she shall be called, The LORD our righteousness.

¹⁷For thus saith the LORD; David shall never want a man to sit upon the throne of the house of Israel;

¹⁸Neither shall the priests the Levites want a man before me to offer burnt offerings, and to kindle meat offerings, and to do sacrifice continually.

EXODUS - REVELATION PLAGUES & JESUS

1ST WITNESS

EXODUS 9:

¹⁰...took ashes of the furnace
...sprinkled it up toward heaven
...(darkening the atmosphere)

...became a boil breaking forth
...upon man and beast.

2ND WITNESS

REVELATION 9:

²...he opened the bottomless pit
...there arose ...smoke of a great
furnace ...the sun and the air were
darkened

³...there came out of the smoke
locusts

⁴...hurt ...only those men which
have not the seal of God in their
foreheads

⁵...tormented five months

⁶...death shall flee from them

⁷...the locusts were like unto horses
prepared unto battle ...on their
heads ...crowns like gold ...faces of
men

⁸...hair of women ...teeth of lions

⁹...breastplates of iron ...wings ...as
the sound of chariots of many
horses

¹⁰...tails like unto scorpions ...a king
over them ...angel of the bottomless
pit ...Abaddon ...Apolloyon.

REVELATION 16:

¹⁰...the seat of the beast

...his kingdom was full of darkness

...they gnawed their tongues

¹¹...blasphemed the God of heaven
because of their pains and their
sores...

3RD WITNESS

JOHN 19:

⁶...Pilate saith unto them, Take ye
him, and crucify *him*: for I find no
fault in him.

⁷The Jews answered him, We have
a law, and by our law he ought to
die, because he made himself the
Son of God.

¹¹...he that delivered me unto thee
hath the greater sin.

¹⁵...they cried out, Away with *him*,
away with *him*, crucify him. Pilate
saith unto them, Shall I crucify your
King? The chief priests answered,
We have no king but Caesar.

EXODUS - REVELATION PLAGUES & JESUS

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

EXODUS 9:

²⁴...there was hail, and fire mingled with the hail, very grievous, such as there was none like it in all the land of Egypt since it became a nation.

²⁵...the hail smote throughout all the land of Egypt all that was in the field, both man and beast; and the hail smote every herb of the field, and brake every tree of the field.

²⁶Only in the land of Goshen, where the children of Israel were, was there no hail.

EXODUS 10:

¹³...the east wind brought the locusts

¹⁵...covered the face of the whole earth ...the land was darkened ...they did eat ...there remained not any green thing...

REVELATION 9:

¹³...a voice from the four horns of the golden altar

¹⁴...Loose the four angels which are bound in ...Euphrates

¹⁵...to slay the third part of men

¹⁶...army of the horsemen were two hundred thousand thousand
¹⁸...men killed by the ...fire ...smoke ...brimstone ...which issued out of their mouths.

REVELATION 16:

¹²...Euphrates ...dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared

¹³...three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon ...beast ...false prophet.

¹⁴...working miracles ...unto the kings of the earth ...to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty.

LUKE 23:

²⁷And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him.

²⁸But Jesus turning unto them said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children.

²⁹For, behold, the days are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck.

³⁰Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us.

³¹For if they do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the dry?

(← One out of three men hanging on the cross lost his eternal soul; i.e. the thief who would not believe in Jesus.)

MATTHEW 27:

³⁹And they that passed by reviled him, wagging their heads,

⁴⁰...save thyself. If thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross.

⁴¹Likewise also the chief priests mocking him...

⁴²...If he be the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe him.

EXODUS - REVELATION PLAGUES & JESUS

1ST WITNESS

EXODUS 10:

²¹...darkness over the land of Egypt ... *which* may be felt

²²...thick darkness ...three days.

EXODUS 12:

⁷And they shall take of the blood, and strike *it* on the two side posts and on the upper door post

¹²...will smite all the firstborn ...against all the gods of Egypt I will execute judgment

¹³...when I see the blood, I will pass over you, and the plague shall not be upon you...

2ND WITNESS

REVELATION 10:

¹And I saw another mighty angel come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud: and a rainbow *was* upon his head, and his face *was* as it were the sun, and his feet as pillars of fire:

²And he had in his hand a little book open: and he set his right foot upon the sea, and *his* left *foot* on the earth,

³And cried with a loud voice, as *when* a lion roareth: and when he had cried, seven thunders uttered their voices.

⁴And when the seven thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Seal up those things which the seven thunders uttered, and write them not.

3RD WITNESS

MARK 15:

³³And when the sixth hour was come, there was darkness over the whole land until the ninth hour.

MATTHEW 12:

⁴⁰For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

JOHN 18:

³⁹But ye have a custom, that I should release unto you one at the passover: will ye therefore that I release unto you the King of the Jews?

HEBREWS 9:

¹²Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption *for us*.

MARK 14:

²⁴And he said unto them, This is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many.

MARK 15:

³⁴And at the ninth hour...

...Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

³⁵And some of them that stood by, when they heard *it*, said, Behold, he calleth Elias.

EXODUS - REVELATION PLAGUES & JESUS

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 10:

⁵And the angel which I saw stand upon the sea and upon the earth lifted up his hand to heaven,

⁶And sware by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which are therein, that there should be time no longer:

⁷But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as he hath declared to his servants the prophets.

(ref. resurrec. / rapture of the saints)

⁸And the voice which I heard from heaven spake unto me again, and said, Go *and* take the little book which is open in the hand of the angel which standeth upon the sea and upon the earth.

⁹And I went unto the angel, and said unto him, Give me the little book.

...And he said unto me, Take *it*, and eat it up; and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shall be in thy mouth sweet as honey.

REVELATION 16:

¹⁵Behold, I come as a thief.

Blessed *is* he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame....

JOHN 19:

²⁸After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished,

...that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst.

²⁹Now there was set a vessel full of vinegar: and they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put *it* upon hyssop, and put *it* to his mouth.

MATTHEW 27:

⁴⁹The rest said, Let be, let us see whether Elias will come to save him.

EXODUS - REVELATION PLAGUES & JESUS

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 16:

¹⁶...he gathered them together ...a place called ...Armageddon
¹⁷...seventh angel ...a great voice out of the temple of heaven
...It is done.

¹⁸...voices ...thunders ...lightnings

...a great earthquake

¹⁹...the great city was divided into three parts
...cities of the nations fell ...great Babylon ...to give unto her ...his wrath

²¹...there fell upon men a great hail

EXODUS 12:

²⁹...at midnight the LORD smote all the firstborn in the land of Egypt

(*Psalm 105:36:*
...*the chief of all their strength.*)

³⁰...there was a great cry in Egypt...

...men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail ...was exceeding great.

JOHN 19:

³⁰When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished: and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.

MATTHEW 27:

⁵⁰Jesus, when he had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the ghost.

⁵¹And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom;

...and the earth did quake,

...and the rocks rent;

JOHN 19:

³⁴But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.

1 JOHN 5:

⁸And there are three that bear witness in earth, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one.

HEBREWS 2:

¹⁴Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil;

EXODUS - REVELATION PLAGUES & JESUS

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

EXODUS 14:

²⁷ ...when the morning appeared

...the LORD overthrew the Egyptians in the midst of the sea.

²⁸ ...all the host of Pharaoh ...into the sea

³⁰ ...Israel saw the Egyptians dead

REVELATION 19:

¹⁹ ...the beast ...armies, ...gathered together

²⁰ ...the beast was taken, and ...the false prophet ...both were cast alive into a lake of fire

²¹ ...the remnant were slain

...with the sword of him that sat upon the horse...

MATTHEW 28:

²And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it.

MARK 16:

²And very early in the morning the first *day* of the week, they came unto the sepulchre at the rising of the sun.

⁶And he saith unto them, Be not affrighted: Ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, which was crucified: he is risen; he is not here: behold the place where they laid him.

2 THESSALONIANS 2:

⁸And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth,

...and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming:

REVELATION 1:

¹⁸ I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.

MATTHEW 27:

⁵²And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose,

⁵³And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.

COLOSSIANS 2:

¹⁵And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a show of them openly, triumphing over them in it.

CHAPTER 22

CANDLESTICK & TWO TREES

The title of this chapter, “Candlestick & Two Trees”, is a reference to the title of this book, The Two Witnesses, which is also a reference to Zechariah 4:2-3 with the golden candlestick and an olive tree on either side of it. What meaneth all this?

The last three pages of the following Bible pattern compares three chapters: Exodus 25, Matthew 17, and Zechariah 4. The identity of the two olive trees of Zechariah 4 compares with Moses and Elijah (the law and the prophets), and it also compares with the two cherubs on either side of the mercy seat of the ark of the covenant. The candlestick of gold and the mercy seat of gold compare with Jesus. “Grace, grace” in Zechariah 4 compares with Jesus rising from the dead. There are other comparisons in this pattern, and each one provides additional confirmation that Jesus is the Messiah and that he is who he says he is, the great I AM.

The first five pages of the following Bible pattern compares three chapters: Exodus 17, Luke 23, and Luke 19. Exodus 17 is the 67th chapter of the Old Testament and Luke 23 is the 67th chapter of the New Testament, so there should be matching subject matter in both chapters. Luke 19 provides additional matching scriptures also. The smiting of the rock of Horeb compares with Jesus being crucified. The water that comes out of the rock to quench the people’s thirst compares with the blood covenant through Jesus that permits the quenching of spiritual thirst by the living water of the Holy Spirit. Aaron and Hur on either side of Moses compares with the two malefactors on either side of Jesus on the cross. At the going down of the sun/Son, victory was won. There are additional details in the comparisons for study.

There will be a future fulfillment of this pattern by what the people of God go through in the last days.

CANDLESTICK & TWO TREES

1ST WITNESS

EXODUS 17:

¹And all the congregation of the children of Israel journeyed from the wilderness of Sin, after their journeys, according to the commandment of the LORD,

...and pitched in Rephidim: and there was no water for the people to drink.

²Wherefore the people did chide with Moses, and said, Give us water that we may drink.

...And Moses said unto them, Why chide ye with me? wherefore do ye tempt the LORD?

³And the people thirsted there for water; and the people murmured against Moses, and said,

...Wherefore is this that thou hast brought us up out of Egypt, to kill us and our children and our cattle with thirst?

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 23:

¹³And Pilate, when he had called together the chief priests and the rulers and the people,

¹⁴Said unto them, Ye have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people: and, behold, I, having examined *him* before you, have found no fault in this man touching those things whereof ye accuse him:

¹⁵No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him; and, lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto him.

¹⁶I will therefore chastise him, and release *him*.

¹⁷(For of necessity he must release one unto them at the feast.)

¹⁸And they cried out all at once, saying, Away with this *man*, and release unto us Barabbas:

¹⁹(Who for a certain sedition made in the city, and for murder, was cast into prison.)

²⁰Pilate therefore, willing to release Jesus, spake again to them.

²¹But they cried, saying, Crucify *him*, crucify *him*.

²²And he said unto them the third time,

...Why, what evil hath he done? I have found no cause of death in him: I will therefore chastise him, and let *him* go.

²³And they were instant with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified.

...And the voices of them and of the chief priests prevailed.

3RD WITNESS

NOTES:

← *Sin,*

← *and Rephidim = places in the desert.*

CANDLESTICK & TWO TREES

1ST WITNESS

EXODUS 17:

⁴And Moses cried unto the LORD, saying, What shall I do unto this people? they be almost ready to stone me.

⁵And the LORD said unto Moses, Go on before the people, and take with thee of the elders of Israel; and thy rod, wherewith thou smotest the river, take in thine hand, and go.

⁶Behold, I will stand before thee there upon the rock in Horeb; and thou shalt smite the rock, and there shall come water out of it, that the people may drink. And Moses did so in the sight of the elders of Israel.

⁷And he called the name of the place Massah, and Meribah, because of the chiding of the children of Israel, and because they tempted the LORD, saying, Is the LORD among us, or not?

⁸Then came Amalek, and fought with Israel in Rephidim.

⁹And Moses said unto Joshua, Choose us out men, and go out, fight with Amalek:

...to morrow I will stand on the top of the hill with the rod of God in mine hand.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 23:

²⁴And Pilate gave sentence that it should be as they required.

²⁵And he released unto them him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired; but he delivered Jesus to their will.

²⁶And as they led him away,

...they laid hold upon one Simon, a Cyrenian, coming out of the country, and on him they laid the cross, that he might bear *it* after Jesus.

²⁷And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him.

²⁸But Jesus turning unto them said, Daughters of Jerusalem,

...weep not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children.

3RD WITNESS

NOTES:

← Horeb = Sinai Mountains
(as in Calvary)

← Massah and Meribah = places in the desert.

LUKE 19:

⁴¹And when he was come near, he beheld the city,

and wept over it,

⁴²Saying, If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes.

CANDLESTICK & TWO TREES

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

²⁹For, behold, the days are coming,
in the which they shall say,

...Blessed are the barren, and the
wombs that never bare, and the
paps which never gave suck.

³⁰Then shall they begin to say to the
mountains, Fall on us; and to the
hills, Cover us.

³¹For if they do these things in a
green tree, what shall be done in the
dry?

³²And there were also two other,
malefactors, led with him to be put
to death.

³³And when they were come to the
place, which is called Calvary,

...there they crucified him,

...and the malefactors,

...one on the right hand, and
the other on the left.

³⁴Then said Jesus, Father, forgive
them; for they know not what they
do. And they parted his raiment, and
cast lots.

LUKE 19:

⁴³For the days shall come upon
thee, that

...thine enemies shall cast a
trench about thee, and compass
thee round, and keep thee in on
every side,

⁴⁴And shall lay thee even with the
ground, and thy children within
thee; and they shall not leave in
thee one stone upon another;

...because thou knewest not the
time of thy visitation.

*("For all have sinned, and come short
of the glory of God;" Romans 3:23)*

⁴⁵And he went into the temple,
and began to cast out them that
sold therein, and them that
bought;

⁴⁶Saying unto them, It is written,
My house is the house of prayer:
but ye have made it a den of
thieves.

EXODUS 17:

¹⁰So Joshua did as Moses had
said to him, and fought with
Amalek: and Moses, Aaron, and
Hur went up to the top of the hill.

¹¹And it came to pass, when
Moses held up his hand, that
Israel prevailed: and when he let
down his hand, Amalek prevailed.

¹²But Moses' hands were heavy;
and they took a stone, and put *it*
under him, and he sat thereon;
and Aaron and Hur stayed up his
hands,

...the one on the one side, and
the other on the other side; and
his hands were steady until the
going down of the sun.

CANDLESTICK & TWO TREES

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

³⁵And the people stood beholding.
And the rulers also with them derided him, saying, He saved others; let him save himself, if he be Christ, the chosen of God.

³⁶And the soldiers also mocked him, coming to him, and offering him vinegar,

³⁷And saying, If thou be the king of the Jews, save thyself.

³⁸And a superscription also was written over him in letters of Greek, and Latin, and Hebrew, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

³⁹And one of the malefactors which were hanged railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us.

⁴⁰But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

⁴¹And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss.

⁴²And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom.

⁴³And Jesus said unto him, **Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.**

⁴⁴And it was about the sixth hour, and there was a darkness over all the earth until the ninth hour.

⁴⁵And the sun was darkened, and the veil of the temple was rent in the midst.

⁴⁶And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, **Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit:** and having said thus, he gave up the ghost.

LUKE 19:

⁴⁷And he taught daily in the temple. But the chief priests and the scribes and the chief of the people sought to destroy him,

EXODUS 17:

¹²...and his hands were steady until the going down of the sun.

¹³And Joshua discomfited Amalek and his people with the edge of the sword.

(Amalek and his people = the devil's kingdom.)

← ("And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a show of them openly, triumphing over them in it." Colossians 2:15)

⁴⁸And could not find what they might do: for all the people were very attentive to hear him.

CANDLESTICK & TWO TREES

1ST WITNESS

EXODUS 17:

¹⁴And the LORD said unto Moses, Write this for a memorial in a book, and rehearse *it* in the ears of Joshua: for I will utterly put out the remembrance of Amalek from under heaven.

¹⁵And Moses built an altar, and called the name of it Jehovahnissi:

¹⁶For he said, Because the LORD hath sworn

...that the LORD will have war with Amalek from generation to generation.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 24:

⁴⁴And he said unto them, *These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms, concerning me.*

⁴⁵Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures,

⁴⁶And said unto them, *Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day:*

⁴⁷*And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.*

⁴⁸*And ye are witnesses of these things.*

⁴⁹*And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high.*

3RD WITNESS

CANDLESTICK & TWO TREES

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

EXODUS 25:

¹⁰And they shall make an ark of shittim wood: two cubits and a half *shall be* the length thereof, and a cubit and a half the breadth thereof, and a cubit and a half the height thereof.

¹³And thou shalt make staves of shittim wood, and overlay them with gold.

¹⁴And thou shalt put the staves into the rings by the sides of the ark, that the ark may be borne with them.

¹⁵The staves shall be in the rings of the ark: they shall not be taken from it.

(← *As in the wooden beams of the cross...*)

(← *...which were used to lift Jesus off the ground.*)

MATTHEW 17:

¹And he said unto them, **Verily I say unto you, That there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power.**

ZECHARIAH 4:

¹And the angel that talked with me came again, and waked me, as a man that is wakened out of his sleep,

¹⁶And thou shalt put into the ark the testimony which I shall give thee.

¹⁷And thou shalt make a mercy seat of pure gold: two cubits and a half *shall be* the length thereof, and a cubit and a half the breadth thereof.

¹⁸And thou shalt make two cherubims of gold, of beaten work shalt thou make them, in the two ends of the mercy seat.

¹⁹And make one cherub on the one end, and the other cherub on the other end: *even* of the mercy seat shall ye make the cherubims on the two ends thereof.

²And after six days Jesus taketh *with him* Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up into an high mountain apart by themselves: and he was transfigured before them.

³And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow; so as no fuller on earth can white them.

⁴And there appeared unto them Elias with Moses: and they were talking with Jesus.

²And said unto me, What seest thou? And I said, I have looked, and behold a candlestick all of gold, with a bowl upon the top of it, and his seven lamps thereon,

...and seven pipes to the seven lamps, which *are* upon the top thereof:

³And two olive trees by it, one upon the right side of the bowl, and the other upon the left side thereof.

CANDLESTICK & TWO TREES

1ST WITNESS

EXODUS 25:

²⁰And the cherubims shall stretch forth *their wings* on high, covering the mercy seat with their wings, and their faces *shall look* one to another; toward the mercy seat shall the faces of the cherubims be.

²¹And thou shalt put the mercy seat above upon the ark; and in the ark thou shalt put the testimony that I shall give thee.

²²And there I will meet with thee, and I will commune with thee from above the mercy seat, from between the two cherubims which *are* upon the ark of the testimony,

...of all *things* which I will give thee in commandment unto the children of Israel.

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 17:

⁵And Peter answered and said to Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

⁶For he wist not what to say; for they were sore afraid.

⁷And there was a cloud that overshadowed them: and a voice came out of the cloud,

...saying, This is my beloved Son: hear him.

⁸And suddenly, when they had looked round about, they saw no man any more, save Jesus only with themselves.

⁹And as they came down from the mountain,

...he charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seen, till the Son of man

...were risen from the dead.

¹⁰And they kept that saying with themselves, questioning one with another what the rising from the dead should mean.

3RD WITNESS

ZECHARIAH 4:

⁴So I answered and spake to the angel that talked with me, saying, What *are* these, my lord?

⁵Then the angel that talked with me answered and said unto me, Knowest thou not what these be? And I said, No, my lord.

⁶Then he answered and spake unto me, saying, This is the word of the LORD unto Zerubbabel,

...saying, Not by might, nor by power, but by my spirit, saith the LORD of hosts.

⁷Who *art* thou, O great mountain?

...before Zerubbabel *thou shalt become* a plain: and he shall bring forth the headstone thereof *with shoutings*,

...*crying*, Grace, grace unto it.

⁸Moreover the word of the LORD came unto me, saying,

CANDLESTICK & TWO TREES

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

MATTHEW 17:

¹⁰And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the scribes that Elias must first come?

¹¹And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things.

¹²But I say unto you, That Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed. Likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them.

¹³Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.

ZECHARIAH 4:

⁹The hands of Zerubbabel have laid the foundation of this house; his hands shall also finish it;

...and thou shalt know that the LORD of hosts hath sent me unto you.

¹⁰For who hath despised the day of small things? for they shall rejoice, and shall see the plummet in the hand of Zerubbabel *with* those seven; they *are* the eyes of the LORD, which run to and fro through the whole earth.

CHAPTER 23

THE LIVING TEMPLE

The prophecy of Jesus concerning the last days is a direct match with the events concerning the last supper and the betrayal of Jesus. The last supper and betrayal is additional information in order for the Christian to know how the last days are going to play out.

After an exchange of money, Jesus was to be killed. Because of a paycheck or a promise of money, false Christians will betray true Christians to the religious leadership and then be turned over to the governmental order for execution. The true Christians represent the living temple of stones to be eventually thrown down.

Before this takes place, God will be drawing His people close together spiritually while the rest of the people in the world will be fighting against each other in wars and ethnic battles. There will also be false Christs and false religions calling for people to follow them but the Holy Spirit will draw the true Christians together however He will and there will be fellowship with the Lord and with each other.

Afterwards, true Christians will each be in their own spiritual garden praying earnestly right before persecution take its full course. The sign will be when armies are surrounding Jerusalem / Israel. It is important to pray that ye enter not into temptation, before the sign appears!

Eventually there is a great earthquake and a resurrection around the time of the Feast of Passover in the spring and chaos will usher in. The antichrist shortly after makes his appearance.

THE LIVING TEMPLE

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 21:

¹And he looked up, and saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasury.

²And he saw also a certain poor widow casting in thither two mites.

³And he said, **Of a truth I say unto you, that this poor widow hath cast in more than they all:**

⁴**For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God: but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had.**

⁵And as some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones and gifts, he said,

⁶**As for these things which ye behold, the days will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.**

⁷And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and what sign will there be when these things shall come to pass?

⁸And he said, **Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ, and the time draweth near: go ye not therefore after them.**

⁹**But when ye shall hear of wars and commotions, be not terrified: for these things must first come to pass; but the end is not by and by.**

(Moses ate the passover with his disciples right before the last plague of judgment upon the first born of Egypt.)

¹⁰Then said he unto them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom:

¹¹And great earthquakes shall be in divers places, and famines, and pestilences; and fearful sights and great signs shall there be from heaven.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 22:

¹Now the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the Passover.

²And the chief priests and scribes sought how they might kill him; for they feared the people.

³Then entered Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve.

⁴And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them.

⁵And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money.

⁶And he promised, and sought opportunity to betray him unto them in the absence of the multitude.

⁷Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the passover must be killed.

⁸And he sent Peter and John, saying, **Go and prepare us the passover, that we may eat.**

⁹And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare?

¹⁰And he said unto them, **Behold, when ye are entered into the city, there shall a man meet you, bearing a pitcher of water; follow him into the house where he entereth in.**

¹¹And ye shall say unto the goodman of the house, The Master saith unto thee, Where is the guestchamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples?

¹²And he shall show you a large upper room furnished: there make ready.

¹³And they went, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover.

¹⁴And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him.

¹⁵And he said unto them, **With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you**

(During the feast of Passover / Unleavened Bread there was an earthquake when Jesus died on the cross and another earthquake when He rose from the grave.)

THE LIVING TEMPLE

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 21:

¹²But before all these, they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my name's sake.

¹³And it shall turn to you for a testimony.

¹⁴Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before what ye shall answer:

¹⁵For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 22:

¹⁵...before I suffer:

¹⁶For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God.

¹⁷And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide *it* among yourselves:

¹⁸For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.

¹⁹And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake *it*, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me.

²⁰Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you.

²¹But, behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me is with me on the table.

²²And truly the Son of man goeth, as it was determined: but woe unto that man by whom he is betrayed!

²³And they began to inquire among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing.

²⁴And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest.

²⁵And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors.

²⁶But ye *shall not be* so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve.

²⁷For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? is not he that sitteth at meat? but I am among you as he that serveth.

²⁸Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations.

²⁹And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me;

³⁰That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

³¹And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat:

³²But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.

³³And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee, both into prison, and to death.

³⁴And he said, I tell thee, Peter, the cock shall not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.

THE LIVING TEMPLE

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 21:

²⁹ And he spake to them a parable;

... Behold the fig tree, and all the trees;

³⁰ When they now shoot forth, ye see and know of your own selves that summer is now nigh at hand.

³¹ So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand.

³² Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, till all be fulfilled.

³³ Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

³⁴ And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares.

³⁵ For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth.

³⁶ Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.

³⁷ And in the day time he was teaching in the temple; and at night he went out, and abode in the mount that is called *the mount of Olives*.

LUKE 22:

³⁵ And he said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing?

And they said, Nothing.

³⁶ Then said he unto them, But now, he that hath a purse, let him take *it*, and likewise *his* scrip: and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one.

³⁷ For I say unto you, that this that is written must yet be accomplished in me, And he was reckoned among the transgressors: for the things concerning me have an end.

³⁸ And they said, Lord, behold, here *are* two swords. And he said unto them, It is enough.

³⁹ And he came out, and went, as he was wont, to the mount of Olives; and his disciples also followed him.

⁴⁰ And when he was at the place, he said unto them, Pray that ye enter not into temptation.

⁴¹ And he was withdrawn from them about a stone's cast, and kneeled down, and prayed,

⁴² Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done.

⁴³ And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him.

⁴⁴ And being in an agony he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground.

⁴⁵ And when he rose up from prayer, and was come to his disciples, he found them sleeping for sorrow,

⁴⁶ And said unto them, Why sleep ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.

THE LIVING TEMPLE

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 21:

³⁸And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, for to hear him.

(Verses 16-23 are shown below out of sequence for clarity.)

¹⁶And ye shall be betrayed both by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolks, and friends; ...and some of you shall they cause to be put to death.

¹⁷And ye shall be hated of all *men* for my name's sake.

¹⁸But there shall not an hair of your head perish.

¹⁹In your patience possess ye your souls.

²⁰And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies,

...then know that the desolation thereof is nigh.

²¹Then let them which are in Judaea flee to the mountains;

...and let them which are in the midst of it depart out;

...and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto.

²²For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled.

²³But woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck, in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 22:

⁴⁷And while he yet spake, behold a multitude, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and drew near unto Jesus to kiss him.

⁴⁸But Jesus said unto him, Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss?

⁴⁹When they which were about him saw what would follow, they said unto him, Lord, shall we smite with the sword?

⁵⁰And one of them smote the servant of the high priest, and cut off his right ear.

⁵¹And Jesus answered and said, Suffer ye thus far. And he touched his ear, and healed him.

⁵²Then Jesus said unto the chief priests, and captains of the temple, and the elders, which were come to him, Be ye come out, as against a thief, with swords and staves?

⁵³When I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched forth no hands against me: but this is your hour, and the power of darkness.

⁵⁴Then took they him, and led *him*, and brought him into the high priest's house. And Peter followed afar off.

⁵⁵And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall, and were set down together, ...Peter sat down among them.

⁵⁶But a certain maid beheld him as he sat by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him, and said, This man was also with him.

⁵⁷And he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not.

⁵⁸And after a little while another saw him, and said, Thou art also of them. And Peter said, Man, I am not.

⁵⁹And about the space of one hour after another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a truth this *fellow* also was with him: for he is a Galilaeen.

⁶⁰And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediately, while he yet spake, the cock crew.

⁶¹And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter. And Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, Before the cock crew, thou shalt deny me thrice.

⁶²And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.

THE LIVING TEMPLE

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 21:

²⁴And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

²⁵And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring;

²⁶Men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken.

²⁷And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory.

²⁸And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh. (redemption for those who believe)

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 22:

⁶³And the men that held Jesus mocked him, and smote him.

⁶⁴And when they had blindfolded him, they struck him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophecy, who is it that smote thee?

⁶⁵And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.

⁶⁶And as soon as it was day, the elders of the people and the chief priests and the scribes came together, and led him into their council, saying,

⁶⁷Art thou the Christ? tell us. And he said unto them, If I tell you, ye will not believe:

⁶⁸And if I also ask you, ye will not answer me, nor let me go.

⁶⁹Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.

⁷⁰Then said they all, Art thou then the Son of God? And he said unto them, Ye say that I am.

⁷¹And they said, What need we any further witness? for we ourselves have heard of his own mouth. (damnation for those who do not believe)

CHAPTER 24

THE 6 SEALS & REVELATION 19-20

In the Bible pattern that follows, the columns of Revelation 6 and Matthew 24 represent the tribulation of the last days and the rise of the kingdom of the antichrist. Revelation 19 and 20 represent the end of the tribulation with the downfall of the antichrist and the reign of the kingdom of Jesus Christ. The antichrist false Messiah makes his appearance 3 ½ years before the true Messiah Jesus returns.

There will be a false Second Coming midway through the 5th seal of Revelation 6, which is 3 ½ years before the real Second Coming of Jesus. It will start with a period of deception, wars, famines, plagues, and persecution. Then World War III will begin with an attack and overthrow of the United States (judgment), followed by a short intense global battle which results in a truce and the formation of world government with the appearance of the false Messiah in such a way that it appears to be the Second Coming. Once the antichrist false Messiah appears, the great deception is in place and salvation will no longer be possible for people who are unsaved.

It is important to understand in the following pattern that Revelation 6/Matthew 24 match up with Revelation 19/20 because their pattern of events match. However, Revelation 6/Matthew 24 takes place chronologically before Revelation 19/20 does.

Refer to Appendix E for a detailed study of the book of Revelation's chronological order of events.

THE 6 SEALS & REVELATION 19-20

1ST WITNESS

REVELATION 6:

¹And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals,

(9-11-01 destruction of New York City's World Trade towers?)

...and I heard, as it were

...the noise of thunder,

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 24:

¹And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to *him* for to show him the buildings of the temple.

²And Jesus said unto them, **See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.**

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 19:

¹And after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, Alleluia; Salvation, and glory, and honour, and power, unto the Lord our God:

²For true and righteous *are* his judgments: for he hath judged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged the blood of his servants at her hand.

³And again they said, Alleluia. And her smoke rose up for ever and ever.

⁴And the four and twenty elders and the four beasts fell down and worshipped God that sat on the throne, saying, Amen; Alleluia.

⁵And a voice came out of the throne, saying, Praise our God, all ye his servants, and ye that fear him, both small and great.

⁶And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

⁷Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready.

⁸And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints.

⁹And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed *are* they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.

¹⁰And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, See *thou do it* not: I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.

THE 6 SEALS & REVELATION 19-20

1ST WITNESS

REVELATION 6:

¹...one of the four beasts saying, Come and see.

²And I saw, and behold a white horse: and he that sat on him had a bow;

...and a crown was given unto him:

...and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.

³And when he had opened the second seal, I heard the second beast say, Come and see.

⁴And there went out another horse that was red: and *power* was given to him that sat thereon to take peace from the earth,

...and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword.

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 24:

³And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, ...when shall these things be? ...and what *shall be* the sign of thy coming, ...and of the end of the world?

⁴And Jesus answered and said unto them, **Take heed that no man deceive you.**

⁵**For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.**

("I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive." John 5:43)

⁶**And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all *these things* must come to pass, but the end is not yet.**

⁷**For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom:**

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 19:

¹¹And I saw heaven opened,

and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war.

¹²His eyes *were* as a flame of fire, and on his head *were* many crowns;

...and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself.

¹³And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God.

¹⁴And the armies *which were* in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

¹⁵And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.

¹⁶And he hath on *his* vesture and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

THE 6 SEALS & REVELATION 19-20

1ST WITNESS

REVELATION 6:

⁵And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third beast say, Come and see. And I beheld, and lo a black horse; and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand.

⁶And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say, A measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny; and see thou hurt not the oil and the wine.

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 24:

⁷...and there shall be famines,

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 19:

¹⁷And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, Come and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the great God;

¹⁸That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all *men, both free and bond, both small and great.*

THE 6 SEALS & REVELATION 19-20

1ST WITNESS

REVELATION 6:

⁷And when he had opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth beast say, Come and see.
⁸And I looked, and behold a pale horse:

...and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 24:

⁷...and pestilences,

...and earthquakes, in divers places.
⁸All these are the beginning of sorrows.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 19:

¹⁹And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army.

²⁰And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image.

...These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 20:

¹And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand.

²And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years,

³And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season.

5TH WITNESS

REVELATION 20:

⁷And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison,
⁸And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom *is* as the sand of the sea.

⁹And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them.

¹⁰And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.

THE 6 SEALS & REVELATION 19-20

1ST WITNESS

REVELATION 6:

⁹And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held:

¹⁰And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

¹¹And white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season,

...until their fellowservants also and their brethren, that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 24:

⁹Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake. (Phase One)

(Judgment upon the USA.)

(The 144,000 caught away.)

(The unveiling of the antichrist and the great deception.)

⁹Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake. (Phase Two)

¹⁰And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 19:

²¹And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 20:

⁴And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them:

...and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received *his* mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands;

(The 1st Resurrection)

...and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.

⁵But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This *is* the first resurrection.

⁶Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection:

...on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.

5TH WITNESS

REVELATION 20:

¹¹And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them.

¹²And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is *the book* of life:

...and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.

(The 2nd Resurrection)

¹³And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.

¹⁴And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.

¹⁵And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.

CHAPTER 25

CRUCIFIXION & THE 6 SEALS OF REVELATION 6

Revelation Chapter 6 is a summary of what happens in the last days, much like Matthew Chapter 24, Mark Chapter 13, and Luke Chapters 17 and 21. This is explained in Chapter 33 of the first volume of The Two Witnesses. Revelation 6 is also a summary of most of the book of Revelation, up to the point where God's wrath is poured out (the Day of the Lord), then Revelation 6 stops there. In Revelation 6 there are the famous "four horses of the apocalypse": white, red, black, and pale. The Infinity Bible Code teaches that similarly-numbered Bible chapters and books will have the same content. The four horses are also found in Zechariah 6:

¹And I turned, and lifted up mine eyes, and looked, and, behold, there came four chariots out from between two mountains; and the mountains *were* mountains of brass.

²In the first chariot *were* red horses; and in the second chariot black horses;

³And in the third chariot white horses; and in the fourth chariot grisled and bay horses.

⁴Then I answered and said unto the angel that talked with me, *What are these, my lord?*

⁵And the angel answered and said unto me, *These are the four spirits of the heavens, which go forth from standing before the Lord of all the earth.*

⁶The black horses which *are* therein go forth into the north country; and the white go forth after them; and the grisled go forth toward the south country.

⁷And the bay went forth, and sought to go that they might walk to and fro through the earth: and he said, *Get you hence, walk to and fro through the earth. So they walked to and fro through the earth.*

⁸Then cried he upon me, and spake unto me, saying, *Behold, these that go toward the north country have quieted my spirit in the north country.*"

Zechariah 6

We know that the Bible illustrates cycles of events that repeat throughout time, in a matching pattern. So, the pattern of what happened in the past will be the pattern of what happens in the future. What will happen in the future has already happened in the past. Even though Revelation 6 is what will happen in the last days, its pattern has already taken place one or more times in the past. When studying the following match-up between the gospel of Matthew and Revelation 6, what is revealed is that the pattern of Revelation 6 shows that the last days of Jesus match the last days of the Church.

Thus, Revelation 6 is a summary of the last days of God's people. The things that Jesus went through will be the things that God's people go through, according to the six page Bible pattern that follows. The Church will be tried by fire in the last days when Seal 1 through Seal 5 are opened. Jesus was betrayed by religious leadership and so too will the Church be betrayed by religious leadership. Seal 6 is the sign that the wrath of God (Day of the Lord) is soon to come upon the devil's kingdom, and that is when the people of the world will be hiding in the earth while God's martyred people will be resurrected out of the earth.

"Then said Jesus unto his disciples, *If any **man** will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it.*"

Matthew 16:24-25

CRUCIFIXION & THE 6 SEALS OF REVELATION 6

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

³¹Then saith Jesus unto them,

...All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.

³²But after I am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee.

⁴⁷And while he yet spake, lo, Judas, one of the twelve, came,

...and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and elders of the people.

⁴⁸Now he that betrayed him gave them a sign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he: hold him fast.

⁵¹And, behold, one of them which were with Jesus

...stretched out *his* hand, and drew his sword, and struck a servant of the high priest's, and smote off his ear.

⁵²Then said Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into his place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword.

⁵³Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels?

⁵⁴But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?

⁵⁵In that same hour said Jesus to the multitudes, Are ye come out as against a thief with swords and staves for to take me? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye laid no hold on me.

⁵⁶But all this was done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled.

2ND WITNESS

REVELATION 6: (SEAL #1)

¹And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals,

...and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of the four beasts saying, Come and see.

²And I saw, and behold a white horse: and he that sat on him had a bow;

...and a crown was given unto him:

...and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.

(SEAL #2)

³And when he had opened the second seal, I heard the second beast say, Come and see.

⁴And there went out another horse that was red: and *power* was given to him that sat thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword.

CRUCIFIXION & THE 6 SEALS OF REVELATION 6

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

³Then Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders,

⁴Saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What *is that* to us? see thou *to that*.

⁵And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself.

⁶And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and said,

...It is not lawful for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood.

⁷And they took counsel, and bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in.

⁸Wherefore that field was called, The field of blood, unto this day.

⁹Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying,

...And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the children of Israel did value;

¹⁰And gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me.

2ND WITNESS

REVELATION 6: (SEAL #3)

⁵And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third beast say, Come and see. And I beheld, and lo a black horse; and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand.

("And I said unto them, If ye think good, give me my price; and if not, forbear. So they weighed for my price thirty pieces of silver." Zechariah 11:12)

⁶And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say, A measure of wheat for a penny,

...and three measures of barley for a penny;

...and see thou hurt not the oil and the wine.

(←"So Hanameel mine uncle's son came to me in the court of the prison according to the word of the LORD, and said unto me, Buy my field, I pray thee, that is in Anathoth, which is in the country of Benjamin: for the right of inheritance is thine, and the redemption is thine; buy it for thyself. Then I knew that this was the word of the LORD. And I bought the field of Hanameel my uncle's son, that was in Anathoth**, and weighed him the money, even seventeen shekels of silver. And I subscribed the evidence, and sealed it, and took witnesses, and weighed him the money in the balances." Jeremiah 32:8-10)*

**Hanameel = Strong's 2601, from 2606: God has favored, a tower in Jerusalem*

***Anathoth = Strong's 6068, the name of two Israelis, also a place in Palestine (in the country of Benjamin)*

CRUCIFIXION & THE 6 SEALS OF REVELATION 6

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

¹¹And Jesus stood before the governor:

...and the governor asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews? And Jesus said unto him, **Thou sayest.**

¹²And when he was accused of the chief priests and elders, he answered nothing.

¹³Then said Pilate unto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witness against thee?

¹⁴And he answered him to never a word; insomuch that the governor marvelled greatly.

¹⁵Now at *that* feast the governor was wont to release unto the people a prisoner, whom they would.

¹⁶And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.

¹⁷Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus which is called Christ?

¹⁸For he knew that for envy they had delivered him.

¹⁹When he was set down on the judgment seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that just man: for I have suffered many things this day in a dream because of him.

²⁰But the chief priests and elders persuaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus.

²¹The governor answered and said unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you? They said, Barabbas.

²²Pilate saith unto them, What shall I do then with Jesus which is called Christ?

... *They* all say unto him, Let him be crucified.

²³And the governor said, Why, what evil hath he done? But they cried out the more, saying, Let him be crucified.

²⁴When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but *that* rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed *his* hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person: see ye *to it*.

²⁵Then answered all the people, and said, His blood be on us, and on our children.

2ND WITNESS

REVELATION 6: (SEAL #4)

⁷And when he had opened the **fourth** seal, I heard the voice of the **fourth** beast say, Come and see.

⁸And I looked, and behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death,

...and Hell followed with him.

...And power was given unto them over

...the fourth* part of the earth,

...to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death,

...and with the beasts of the earth.

**Modern Christianity constitutes about a fourth part of the world's religions.*

CRUCIFIXION & THE 6 SEALS OF REVELATION 6

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

²⁶Then released he Barabbas unto them: and when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered *him* to be crucified.

²⁷Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band of *soldiers*.

²⁸And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe.

²⁹And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put *it* upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews!

³⁰And they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote *him* on the head.

³¹And after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him, and led him away to crucify *him*.

³²And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to bear his cross.

³³And when they were come unto a place called Golgotha, that is to say, a place of a skull,

³⁴They gave him vinegar to drink mingled with gall: and when he had tasted *thereof*, he would not drink.

³⁵And they crucified him, and parted his garments, casting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, They parted my garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast lots.

³⁶And sitting down they watched him there;

³⁷And set up over his head his accusation written, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

³⁸Then were there two thieves crucified with him, one on the right hand, and another on the left.

³⁹And they that passed by reviled him, wagging their heads,

⁴⁰And saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest *it* in three days, save thyself. If thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross.

⁴¹Likewise also the chief priests mocking him, with the scribes and elders, said,

⁴²He saved others; himself he cannot save. If he be the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe him.

⁴³He trusted in God; let him deliver him now, if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God.

⁴⁴The thieves also, which were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth.

2ND WITNESS

REVELATION 6: (SEAL #5)

⁹And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held:

(← Compare with Rev. 6:11 verse: "white robes")

CRUCIFIXION & THE 6 SEALS OF REVELATION 6

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

⁴⁵Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land unto the ninth hour. (*from noon to 3:00 pm*)

⁴⁶And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, **Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani?** that is to say, **My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?**

⁴⁷Some of them that stood there, when they heard *that*, said, This *man* calleth for Elias.

⁴⁸And straightway one of them ran, and took a sponge, and filled *it* with vinegar, and put *it* on a reed, and gave him to drink.

⁴⁹The rest said, Let be, let us see whether Elias will come to save him.

DANIEL 12:

¹⁰Many shall be purified, and made white, and tried...

REVELATION 3:

⁴**Thou hast a few names even in Sardis which have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthy.**

⁵**He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life...**

REVELATION 7:

⁹After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands;

¹³And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are arrayed in white robes? and whence came they?

¹⁴And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.

REVELATION 12:

¹¹And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death.

REVELATION 15:

²And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire: and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, *and* over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glass, having the harps of God.

³And they sing the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb...

2ND WITNESS

REVELATION 6: (*SEAL #5, cont.*)

(*a 4th part of the day*)

¹⁰And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

¹¹And white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season,

...until their fellowservants also and their brethren, that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

CRUCIFIXION & THE 6 SEALS OF REVELATION 6

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

⁵⁰Jesus, when he had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the ghost.

⁵¹And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent;

⁵²And the graves were opened;

...and many bodies of the saints which slept arose,

⁵³And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.

⁵⁴Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God.

⁵⁵And many women were there beholding afar off, which followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him:

⁵⁶Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joseph, and the mother of Zebedee's children.

⁵⁷When the even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathaea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus' disciple:

⁵⁸He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered.

⁵⁹And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth,

⁶⁰And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed.

⁶¹And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sepulchre.

⁶²Now the next day, that followed the day of the preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate,

⁶³Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again.

⁶⁴Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure

...until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first.

⁶⁵Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch: go your way, make *it* as sure as ye can.

⁶⁶So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

2ND WITNESS

REVELATION 6: (SEAL #6)

¹²And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal,

...and, lo, there was a great earthquake; and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood;

¹³And the stars of heaven fell unto the earth, even as a fig tree casteth her untimely figs, when she is shaken of a mighty wind.

¹⁴And the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together; and every mountain and island were moved out of their places.

¹⁵And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every bondman,

...and every free man,

...hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains;

¹⁶And said to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb:

¹⁷For the great day of his wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand?

CHAPTER 26

DESCENT FROM THE MOUNT

This chapter discusses some of the deeper revelations of the Word. It is up to the reader to take this information before the Lord in prayerful meditation, since it may be too much to absorb at first.

Consider the following verses:

“For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale’s belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.”
Matthew 12:40

“Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men. (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth? He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things.)”
Ephesians 4:8-10

“For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit: By which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison;”
1 Peter 3:18-19

“He seeing this before spake of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption.”
Acts 2:31

“I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.”
Revelation 1:18

We know from these verses, and from others, that after Jesus died on the cross, He was three days and three nights in the heart of the earth, then He was resurrected. We also know from these verses that the place called “hell” is somewhere inside the earth. Consider also, the following:

“And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham’s bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried; And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented. And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that *would come from thence.*”
Luke 16:22-26

“And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom. And Jesus said unto him, **Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.**”
Luke 23:42-43

The second set of verses tells us that the place called “paradise”, or Abraham’s bosom, is also inside the earth and that there is a “great gulf” between it and hell. Finally, consider the following:

“The strong among the mighty shall speak to him out of the midst of hell with them that help him: they are gone down, they lie uncircumcised, slain by the sword. Asshur *is* there and all her company: his graves *are* about him: all of them slain, fallen by the sword: Whose graves are set in the sides of the pit, and her company is round about her grave: all of them slain, fallen by the sword, which caused terror in the land of the living. There *is* Elam and all her multitude round about her grave, all of them slain, fallen by the sword, which are gone down uncircumcised into the nether parts of the earth, which caused their terror in the land of the living; yet have they borne their shame with them that go down to the pit.”
Ezekiel 32:21-24

CHAPTER 26

DESCENT FROM THE MOUNT

“Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit.”

Isaiah 14:15

The third set of verses reveals that hell is described as “the sides of the pit”. The conclusion that can be made about the three sets of verses is as follows. Prior to the resurrection of Jesus, whenever a saint died he would descend into the center of the earth, into a void known as paradise or Abraham’s bosom and there he would be comforted. Whenever a person died in their sins, they descended into hell, which is the sides of the pit (the sides of the void). Imagine the earth as a peach without its peach seed. In the middle is a void and around this void is the rough-edged sides of the pit. The people who are damned for eternity are in the sides of the pit and could see the saints in the center void. It would be like someone standing on the ground and looking up toward the clouds. He can attempt to jump as high as possible but can never reach the clouds. Thus, it is impossible to pass from “hence” to “thence”.

After the resurrection of Jesus; however, He led “captivity captive” and took the deceased saints with Him to reside in heaven where the Father resides. The result is that there are no longer any saints remaining in the void formerly known as paradise. This void is probably now the “bottomless pit” of Revelation 20:3. When a saint passes away today he goes to be with the Lord, in heaven.

“We are confident, / say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord.”

2 Corinthians 5:8

Appendix A in the first volume of The Two Witnesses discusses the Feasts of the Lord and explains that the resurrection of Jesus took place on the Feast of First Fruits. The saints were in the inner void of the earth, a type of seed in the ground, and Jesus brought them up with Him as a harvest to present to the Father; a type of waving of the sheaf of the first fruits of the barley harvest.

“...When ye be come into the land which I give unto you, and shall reap the harvest thereof, then ye shall bring a sheaf of the firstfruits of your harvest unto the priest: And he shall wave the sheaf before the LORD, to be accepted for you: on the morrow after the sabbath the priest shall wave it.”

Leviticus 23:10-11

Question: so what was Jesus doing in the center of the earth during the three days and three nights? The answer is illustrated in great detail by the following Bible pattern. However, in summary, the answer is that the triumphal entry of Jesus coming down from the Mount of Olives and entering Jerusalem is a match for the death of Jesus on Calvary and his descent into the heart of the earth into paradise. The reader is exhorted to study the scriptural pattern that follows, very carefully. A useful tool in the exploration of the pattern is Appendix G: The Triumphal Entry. Study the scripture of this appendix in order to see what Jesus was saying and doing while in the heart of the earth for three days and nights.

Interestingly, the pattern also shows that of the two thieves on the cross next to Jesus, one was a Gentile and he was the “colt” that Jesus “rode upon” into the place called paradise. When the Gentile thief passed away, Jesus sent two angels to receive the thief into the service of the Lord (Matt. 21:1, Mark 11:1, Luke 19:29).

There have been theories proposed that Jesus was crucified on the Mount of Olives, to the east of Jerusalem. However, this is not biblically consistent. The Bible, along with archaeological evidence, points north of Jerusalem toward Calvary, a.k.a. Golgotha, as the site of the crucifixion. For further discussion, see Appendix B: Bible Archaeology.

DESCENT FROM THE MOUNT

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 19:

²⁸And when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending up to Jerusalem.

ROMANS 11:

²⁵...blindness in part is happened to Israel,

...until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in.

LUKE 19:

²⁹And it came to pass, when he was come nigh to Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount called *the mount* of Olives, he sent two of his disciples,

MARK 11:

²And saith unto them, **Go your way into the village over against you: and as soon as ye be entered into it, ye shall find a colt tied, whereon never man sat; loose him, and bring him.**

³And if any man say unto you, **Why do ye this? say ye that the Lord hath need of him; and straightway he will send him hither.**

⁴And they went their way, and found the colt tied by the door without in a place where two ways met; and they loose him.

⁵And certain of them that stood there said unto them, What do ye, loosing the colt?

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 23:

³³And when they were come to the place, which is called Calvary, there they crucified him, and the malefactors, one on the right hand, and the other on the left.

³⁴Then said Jesus, **Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do.**

³⁹And one of the malefactors which were hanged railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us.

⁴⁰But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

⁴¹And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss.

⁴²And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom.

⁴³And Jesus said unto him, **Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.**

(Jesus instructs two angels to retrieve the thief after he dies and to bring him to Jesus.)

⁴⁴And it was about the sixth hour, and there was a darkness over all the earth until the ninth hour.

⁴⁶And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, **Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit:** and having said thus, he gave up the ghost.

MATTHEW 27:

⁵¹And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent;

*(The thief on the cross – next to Jesus the doorway.)
(The old way of the law is eclipsed by the new way of grace.)*

DESCENT FROM THE MOUNT

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

MARK 11:

⁶And they said unto them even as Jesus had commanded: and they let them go.

⁷And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their garments on him; and he sat upon him.

(The garment of salvation is placed upon the thief with Jesus as his Lord.)

MATTHEW 21:

⁸And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way; others cut down branches from the trees, and strawed *them* in the way.

(As Jesus approaches the Old Testament saints in the heart of the earth, or paradise, they too want garments of salvation and for their branches to be one with the true vine.)

LUKE 19:

³⁷And when he was come nigh, even now at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice for all the mighty works that they had seen;

(The Old Testament saints rejoice as they see Jesus descending from the mount of Calvary.)

³⁸Saying, Blessed *be* the King that cometh in the name of the Lord: peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.

³⁹And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.

(The demons and lost souls in the sides of the pit, or hell, begin to protest.)

⁴⁰And he answered and said unto them, **I tell you that, if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out.**

ISAIAH 14:

¹⁹...that go down to the stones of the pit...

MATTHEW 21:

¹⁰And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying, Who is this?

¹¹And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

TRIUMPHAL ENTRY SUMMARY:

Physical type – Jesus descends the mount of Olives, goes past the graveyards, crosses the Kidron Valley, and enters Jerusalem by the eastern gate.

MARK 11:

¹¹And Jesus entered into Jerusalem, and into the temple: and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the eventide was come, he went out unto Bethany with the twelve.

CRUCIFIXION SUMMARY:

Spiritual type – Jesus descends the mount of Calvary into hell, goes past the lost souls in the sides of the pit, crosses the great gulf of Luke 16:26, and enters the place called paradise.

(The first evening.)

¹²And on the morrow, when they were come from Bethany, he was hungry:

(The next day.)

¹³And seeing a fig tree afar off having leaves, he came, if haply he might find any thing thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves; for the time of figs was not yet.

MATTHEW 24:

³²**Now learn a parable of the fig tree; When his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is nigh:**

³³**So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors.**

DESCENT FROM THE MOUNT

1ST WITNESS

MARK 11:

¹⁴And Jesus answered and said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples heard *it*.

JOHN 12:

²³And Jesus answered them, saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified.

²⁴Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.

²⁵He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal.

²⁶If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will *my* Father honour.

²⁷Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour.

²⁸Father, glorify thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven, *saying*, I have both glorified *it*, and will glorify *it* again.

²⁹The people therefore, that stood by, and heard *it*, said that it thundered: others said, An angel spake to him.

³⁰Jesus answered and said, This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes.

³¹Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out.

MARK 11:

¹⁵And they come to Jerusalem: and Jesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them that sold doves;

¹⁶And would not suffer that any man should carry *any* vessel through the temple.

¹⁷And he taught, saying unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but ye have made it a den of thieves.

¹⁸And the scribes and chief priests heard *it*, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, because all the people was astonished at his doctrine.

LUKE 19:

⁴⁸And could not find what they might do: for all the people were very attentive to hear him.

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 24:

⁴⁴Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh.

⁵⁰The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for *him*, and in an hour that he is not aware of,

1 PETER 3:

¹⁹By which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison;

1 JOHN 3:

⁸...For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

COLOSSIANS 2:

¹⁵And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a show of them openly, triumphing over them in it.

¹⁶Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holyday, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath *days*:

DESCENT FROM THE MOUNT

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

MARK 11:

¹⁹And when even was come, he went out of the city.

²⁰And in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig tree dried up from the roots.

²¹And Peter calling to remembrance saith unto him, Master, behold, the fig tree which thou cursedst is withered away.

²²And Jesus answering saith unto them, Have faith in God.

²³For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith.

²⁴Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive *them*, and ye shall have *them*.

²⁵And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses.

²⁶But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

JOHN 12:

³²And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all *men* unto me.

³³This he said, signifying what death he should die.

³⁴The people answered him, We have heard out of the law that Christ abideth for ever: and how sayest thou, The Son of man must be lifted up? who is this Son of man?

³⁵Then Jesus said unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you. Walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you: for he that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth.

³⁶While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light. These things spake Jesus, and departed, and did hide himself from them.

MATTHEW 24:

⁵¹And shall cut him asunder, and appoint *him* his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

LUKE 18:

⁸... Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?

ISAIAH 42:

⁶I the LORD have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thine hand, and will keep thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, for a light of the Gentiles;

⁷To open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, *and* them that sit in darkness out of the prison house.

DESCENT FROM THE MOUNT

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

MARK 11:

²⁷And they come again to Jerusalem: and as he was walking in the temple, there come to him the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders,

²⁸And say unto him, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority to do these things?

²⁹And Jesus answered and said unto them, I will also ask of you one question, and answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things.

³⁰The baptism of John, was *it* from heaven, or of men? answer me.

³¹And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say, Why then did ye not believe him?

³²But if we shall say, Of men; they feared the people: for all *men* counted John, that he was a prophet indeed.

³³And they answered and said unto Jesus, We cannot tell. And Jesus answering saith unto them, Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

MATTHEW 21:

(The parable of obedience, v. 28-32.)

(The parable of the husbandmen & vineyard, v. 33-44.)

⁴⁵And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them.

⁴⁶But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet.

REVELATION 1:

¹⁸I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.

(The devils of hell have issue with Jesus and despise His teaching and preaching to the former captives.)

MATTHEW 22:

¹And Jesus answered and spake unto them again by parables, and said,

(The parable of the wedding invitation, v. 2-14.)

LUKE 20:

²⁰And they watched *him*, and sent forth spies, which should feign themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governor.

²¹And they asked him, saying, Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither acceptest thou the person of *any*, but teachest the way of God truly:

²²Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Caesar, or no? *(The temptation of Jesus concerning the penny and the tribute due Caesar, v.23-26.)*

(The devils of hell would like for Jesus to stumble and fall.)

²⁷Then came to *him* certain of the Sadducees, which deny that there is any resurrection; and they asked him... *(The question about the seven brothers and one wife, v.28-38.)*

MATTHEW 22:

³⁴But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together.

³⁵Then one of them, *which* was a lawyer, asked *him* a *question*, tempting him, and saying,

³⁶Master, which *is* the great commandment in the law? *(Jesus explains about love, v.37-40.)*

DESCENT FROM THE MOUNT

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

MARK 12:

³⁴...And no man after that durst ask him *any question*.

(The Truth silences devils and the saints rejoice.)

³⁵And Jesus answered and said, while he taught in the temple, **How say the scribes that Christ is the Son of David?**

³⁶**For David himself said by the Holy Ghost, The LORD said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool.**

³⁷**David therefore himself calleth him Lord; and whence is he *then his son*?** And the common people heard him gladly.

MATTHEW 23:

¹Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,

(Beware of the scribes and Pharisees, v.2-12)

(Woe unto you scribes and Pharisees! v.13-33)

(Pronouncement of judgment upon the devils.)

JOHN 12:

⁴⁴Jesus cried and said, **He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me.**

⁴⁵**And he that seeth me seeth him that sent me.**

⁴⁶**I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me should not abide in darkness.**

⁴⁷**And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world.**

⁴⁸**He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.**

⁴⁹**For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak.**

⁵⁰**And I know that his commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak.**

1 PETER 3:

¹⁹By which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison;

MATTHEW 23:

(Jesus prophesies the desolation of Jerusalem, v.34-38)

³⁹**For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord.**

(Jesus lets the Old Testament saints know that they will be leaving the "heart of the earth" in the very near future and prophesies what will happen when they leave. Unfortunately, He and the saints have to leave the religious people behind.)

LUKE 21:

⁷And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and what sign *will there be* when these things shall come to pass?

⁸And he said...

(Synopsis of the last days, v.8-36.)

DESCENT FROM THE MOUNT

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 21:

³⁷And in the day time he was teaching in the temple; and at night he went out, and abode in the mount that is called *the mount of Olives*.

³⁸And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, for to hear him.

(Jesus lets the Old Testament saints know the good news ...

...that it is time for the resurrection and they are coming with Him.)

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 24:

¹Now upon the first *day* of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain *others* with them.

²And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre.

³And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus.

⁴And it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments:

⁵And as they were afraid, and bowed down *their* faces to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye the living among the dead?

⁶He is not here, but is risen: remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee,

⁷Saying, The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again.

MATTHEW 27:

⁵²And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose,

⁵³And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.

CHAPTER 27

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

There are several types of heavenly beings operating in the spirit world; two of which are angels and archangels. The angels are the “regular” messengers and the archangels are the “chief” messengers. Archangels appear to be responsible for carrying very important messages, such as the archangel Gabriel bringing revelation to Daniel or announcing to Mary that she would be giving birth to Jesus, the Savior of the world. Archangels are also involved in significant spiritual warfare events such as Michael protecting the nation of Israel (Dan. 12:1) and casting the devil out of 2nd heaven (Rev. 12:7-9). The devil has his angels also and they are known as messengers of Satan (2 Corinthians 12:7).

ANGELS

The following information about the word “angel” is from Strong’s and Young’s biblical concordances:

Angel = Strong’s 4397 (OT): malak (orig. Hebrew), dispatch as a deputy, messenger
= Strong’s 32 (NT): aggelos (orig. Greek), messenger; from 71 and 34: to bring tidings
= Young’s: (OT) messenger, agent (malak)
= Young’s: (NT) messenger, agent (aggelos)
= MALAK (Hebrew phonetic spelling)
= mem(40) + lamed(30) + aleph(1) + kaph(20)
= 91 (example: Psalm 91:11 “For he shall give his angels charge over thee...”)

For the reader’s clarification, OT and NT refer to “Old Testament” and “New Testament”.

One function of angels appears to be the deliverance of God’s people (Genesis 19:15-16, Psalm 34:7, Daniel 12:1). Another function is executing God’s judgment (Ezekiel 9, Acts 12:22-23). A main function of angels appears to be carrying messages from God to certain people. An example is seen in Genesis Chapter 18 where the LORD appeared to Abraham and he “...lift up his eyes and looked, and, lo, three men stood by him...” The LORD appeared to Abraham in the form of three angels which appeared as men. After they ate with Abraham, they informed him that he and Sarah would have a son. One “man” stayed behind in order for Abraham to intercede to the LORD with while the other two “men” went into Sodom to survey the wickedness before judgment fell. Genesis 19:1 confirms that the two men that went into Sodom were angels. It is this author’s belief that the angel who stayed with Abraham was Gabriel.

Scripture says that Abraham was standing before the LORD and that he drew near to Him (Gen. 18:22-23). Abraham appears to have been standing before an angel of the LORD (Gabriel) and that he was not standing before Jesus because Jesus had not yet come in the form of flesh until Mary gave Him birth. Another example of this can be found in Judges Chapter 6:

“And when Gideon perceived that he was an angel of the LORD, Gideon said, Alas, O Lord GOD! for because I have seen an angel of the LORD face to face. And the LORD said unto him, Peace *be* unto thee; fear not: thou shalt not die.”
Judges 6:22-23

However, the Old Testament does refer to Jesus as being seen occasionally in the spirit. For more discussion and specific verses, see the section following on “JESUS”.

Angels are typically described as men (Genesis 18), sometimes clothed in linen (Ezekiel 9 & 10, Daniel 10 & 12) or sometimes they are described as men clothed in white and/or being as bright as lightning (Matthew 28:3, Mark 16:5). They are not described as having wings or having the appearance of a woman. The only heavenly beings mentioned with wings are the cherubim and seraphim (Ezekiel 1 & 10, Revelation 4, Isaiah 6). If a person sees an “angel” with wings, they should test the spirits to see whether they are of God (1 John 4:1-3). The devil knows how to deceive people and in 2 Corinthians 11:14-15 it says that the devil can appear as an angel of light and that his ministers pose as ministers of righteousness.

CHAPTER 27

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

The devil's angels are discussed in Revelation 12 where we read about the future prophecy of the devil and his angels being cast out of 2nd heaven down to 1st heaven (from the spiritual dimension into the physical dimension). For reference, 2nd heaven is the spirit world outside of the throne room of 3rd heaven (Isaiah 66:1, 2 Cor. 12:2, 1 John 5:7) and the atmosphere and the space above earth is 1st heaven. Revelation 12 tells us in verse 4 that a third of the angels are in the devil's kingdom, having fallen from grace after Lucifer sinned and was cast out of 3rd heaven (Isaiah 14, Ezekiel 28, Luke 10:18) and his angels also fell into sin (Genesis 6:2-4, Jude 1:6, 2 Peter 2:4).

By the end of the Bible, the devil will have received three spiritual demotions:

- 1.) as the archangel Lucifer he sinned and was cast out of the throne room of 3rd heaven (Isaiah 14:12),
- 2.) as the devil he will lose in battle to Michael the archangel and be cast out of the spirit world of 2nd heaven and become an "earthling" (Rev. 12:7-90) and the great tribulation starts shortly thereafter,
- 3.) as the defeated enemy he will be cast into the lake of fire and no longer have access to 1st, 2nd, or 3rd heaven (Rev. 20:10). After this, the Lord will make a new heaven and a new earth (Rev. 21:1).

Los Angeles means "the angels" in Spanish. Does Los Angeles represent fallen angels or good angels? If the spiritual fruit of this city is wickedness, then we can presume that it is the city of fallen angels. In the future, Los Angeles will receive its judgment also, even as the devil's angels are destined for theirs.

ARCHANGELS

As stated previously, the archangels are the chief messengers. Consider the following from biblical concordances:

Archangel = Strong's 743 (NT): archaggelos (orig. Greek word) a chief angel; from 757 and 32: to be first, reign over, angel, messenger
= Young's: (NT) chief messenger (archaggelos)

There appears to be only 3 named archangels in the Bible: Gabriel, Michael, and Lucifer. Details of each archangel are presented in the following sections with a brief summary discussion at the end.

GABRIEL

A description of Gabriel the archangel would include words such as "mighty", "great man of God", "captain of God's people", "chief messenger", "presenter of prophetic revelation knowledge and understanding", "one who stands in the presence of God offering the prayers of the saints", and "messenger of glad tidings".

Here is the Infinity Bible Code methodology for Gabriel's number and its corresponding verses:

Gabriel = Strong's 1403 (OT): man of God, an archangel; from 1397 and 410: mighty, valiant, great, power, strong
= Strong's 1043 (NT): an archangel
= Young's: "God is mighty". A divine messenger sent to Daniel, Mary, & Zecharias
= GBRYAL (Hebrew phonetic spelling)
= gimmel(3) + beth(2) + resh(200) + yod(10) + aleph(1) + lamed(30)
= be great, mighty (Gabar, 205) + yod(10) + God, god, great, mighty (El, 31)
= 246
= 1 Samuel 10 (246th chapter of OT)
= Revelation 8 (246th chapter of NT)

Following are selected verses from 1 Samuel 10 and Revelation 8, the chapters for Gabriel the archangel, and what is revealed are the attributes of Gabriel or the identity of Gabriel:

CHAPTER 27

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

“Then Samuel took a vial of oil, and poured *it* upon his head, and kissed him, and said, *Is it* not because the LORD hath anointed thee *to be captain over his inheritance?*”
1 Samuel 10:1

“And they ran and fetched him thence: and when he stood among the people, he was higher than any of the people from his shoulders and upward. And Samuel said to all the people, See ye him whom the LORD hath chosen, that there is none like him among all the people? And all the people shouted, and said, God save the king.”
1 Samuel 10:23-24

“And another angel came and stood at the altar, having a golden censer; and there was given unto him much incense, that he should offer *it* with the prayers of all saints upon the golden altar which was before the throne.”
Revelation 8:3

Here is another Infinity Bible Code number related to Gabriel:

great, mighty = meod (Hebrew word for great, mighty)
= MED (Hebrew phonetic spelling)
= mem(40) + aleph(1) + daleth(4)
= 45
= Luke 1 (45th chapter of NT)

Here are verses from Luke 1, a chapter for Gabriel the archangel:

“And the angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God; and am sent to speak unto thee, and to show thee these glad tidings.”
Luke 1:19

“And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, To a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin’s name was Mary. And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail, *thou that art* highly favoured, the Lord *is* with thee: blessed *art* thou among women.”
Luke 1:26-28

Here are other chapters and verses concerning Gabriel:

“And it came to pass, when I, *even* I Daniel, had seen the vision, and sought for the meaning, then, behold, there stood before me as the appearance of a man. And I heard a man’s voice between the banks of Ulai, which called, and said, Gabriel, make this *man* to understand the vision. So he came near where I stood: and when he came, I was afraid, and fell upon my face: but he said unto me, Understand, O son of man: for at the time of the end *shall be* the vision.”
Daniel 8:15-17

“Yea, whiles I was speaking in prayer, even the man Gabriel, whom I had seen in the vision at the beginning, being caused to fly swiftly, touched me about the time of the evening oblation. And he informed *me*, and talked with me, and said, O Daniel, I am now come forth to give thee skill and understanding.”
Daniel 9:21-22

“And, behold, an hand touched me, which set me upon my knees and *upon* the palms of my hands. And he (Gabriel) said unto me, O Daniel, a man greatly beloved, understand the words that I speak unto thee, and stand upright: for unto thee am I now sent. And when he had spoken this word unto me, I stood trembling. Then said he (Gabriel) unto me, Fear not, Daniel: for from the first day that thou didst set thine heart to understand, and to chasten thyself before thy God, thy words were heard, and I am come for thy words. But the prince of the kingdom of Persia withstood me one and twenty days: but, lo, Michael (the Archangel), one of the chief princes, came to help me; and I remained there with the kings of Persia. Now I am come to make thee understand what shall befall thy people in the latter days: for yet the vision *is* for *many* days.”

Daniel 10:10-14

CHAPTER 27

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

“But I will show thee that which is noted in the scripture of truth: and *there is* none that holdeth with me (*Gabriel*) in these things, but Michael your prince.” Daniel 10:21

“Then I Daniel looked, and, behold, there stood other two, the one on this side of the bank of the river, and the other on that side of the bank of the river. And *one* said to the man clothed in linen, (*Gabriel*) which *was* upon the waters of the river, How long *shall it be* to the end of these wonders? And I heard the man clothed in linen, which *was* upon the waters of the river, when he held up his right hand and his left hand unto heaven, and swore by him that liveth for ever that *it shall be* for a time, times, and an half; and when he shall have accomplished to scatter the power of the holy people, all these *things* shall be finished.” Daniel 12:5-7

MICHAEL

A description of Michael the archangel would include words such as “powerful”, “who is like God?”, “the prince of the people of Israel”, “holy one of God”, “captain of the hosts of the LORD”, “wielder of the sword”, “executioner of the Lord’s judgment”, and “angel of the Lord’s glory and resurrection power”.

Here is the Infinity Bible Code methodology for Michael’s number and its corresponding verses:

Michael = Strong’s 4317 (OT): who is like God?; from 4310, 3588, and 410: man, power, strong
= Strong’s 3413 (NT): an archangel
= Young’s: “Who is like God?”
= the name of an archangel (Jude 1:9), the prince of the people of Israel (Dan. 12:1)
= MYKAL (Hebrew phonetic spelling)
= mem(40) + yod(10) + kaph(20) + aleph(1) + lamed(30)
= 101
= Leviticus 11 (101st chapter of OT)
= Acts 12 (101st chapter of NT)
= Titus 2 (101x2 = 202nd chapter of NT)
= Mark 15 (101x3 = 260+43 = 303rd chapter of NT)

Selected verses from Leviticus 11, Acts 12, Titus 2, and Mark 15 (chapters for Michael the archangel):

⁴⁴For I *am* the LORD your God: ye shall therefore sanctify yourselves, and ye shall be holy; for I *am* holy: neither shall ye defile yourselves with any manner of creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.

⁴⁵For I *am* the LORD that bringeth you up out of the land of Egypt, to be your God: ye shall therefore be holy, for I *am* holy. ⁴⁶This is the law of the beasts, and of the fowl, and of every living creature that moveth in the waters, and of every creature that creepeth upon the earth: ⁴⁷To make a difference between the unclean and the clean, and between the beast that may be eaten and the beast that may not be eaten.”

Leviticus 11

“And, behold, the angel of the Lord (*Michael*) came upon *him*, and a light shined in the prison: and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly. And his chains fell off from *his* hands.”

Acts 12:7

“Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ; Titus 2:13

“And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and gave up the ghost.”

Mark 15:37

Other chapters and verses concerning Michael:

“And it came to pass, when Joshua was by Jericho, that he lifted up his eyes and looked, and, behold, there stood a man (*Michael*) over against him with his sword drawn in his hand: and Joshua went unto

CHAPTER 27

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

him, and said unto him, *Art thou for us, or for our adversaries?* And he said, Nay; but as captain of the host of the LORD am I now come. And Joshua fell on his face to the earth, and did worship, and said unto him, *What saith my lord unto his servant?* And the captain of the LORD'S host said unto Joshua, *Loose thy shoe from off thy foot; for the place whereon thou standest is holy.* And Joshua did so."
(Joshua 5 = 192 = 101 Michael + 91 Angel) Joshua 5:13-15

"For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel (*Michael, not Gabriel*), and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first:" 1 Thess. 4:16

"But I will show thee that which is noted in the scripture of truth: and *there is none that holdeth with me in these things, but Michael your prince.*" Daniel 10:21

"And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for the children of thy people: and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation *even* to that same time: and at that time thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the book."
Daniel 12:1

"Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, *The Lord rebuke thee.*" Jude 1:9

"And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him."
Revelation 12:7-9

"And the LORD sent an angel, which cut off all the mighty men of valour, and the leaders and captains in the camp of the king of Assyria (*2 Kings 19:35 the angel of the LORD slew 185,000 Assyrians*). So he returned with shame of face to his own land. And when he was come into the house of his god, they that came forth of his own bowels slew him there with the sword. Thus the LORD saved Hezekiah and the inhabitants of Jerusalem from the hand of Sennacherib the king of Assyria, and from the hand of all *other*, and guided them on every side."
2 Chronicles 32:21-22
(2 Chronicles 32 = 399 = 101 Michael + 298 slaughter, sword)

LUCIFER

A description of Lucifer the archangel would include words such as "son of the morning", "shining one", "angel of light", "celebrate", "give praise", "full of wisdom", "perfect in beauty", "the anointed cherub that covereth", and "in the office of the priest, a minister unto the LORD".

Lucifer is a person who the devil used to be, but not anymore. After he sinned he became the devil and his current description would include words such as "a fallen rebel archangel", "unclean spirit", "father of lies", "murderer", "thief", "great red dragon", "adversary", "that old serpent", "the beast", "antichrist", and "Satan".

In certain reference books such as Strong's concordance and Webster's dictionary, Lucifer is defined as the morning star, which is consistent with Freemason philosophy. However, the King James Version of the Bible says that Lucifer is the son of the morning (Isaiah 14:12) and that Jesus is the bright and morning star (Revelation 22:16). The Bible should be the final authority, so exception is taken to Strong's and Webster's interpretations of "morning star" as being Lucifer. The King James Version is the final authority and so "morning star" is specifically and only in reference to Jesus.

Here is the Infinity Bible Code methodology for Lucifer's number and its corresponding verses:

Lucifer = Strong's 1966 (OT): heylel (orig. Hebrew word), morning star (**incorrect**), brightness;

CHAPTER 27

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

from 1984: to shine, show, boast, celebrate, give light, praise
= Young's: "shining one". Heylel is in reference to the glory and pomp of the king of Babylon 720 B.C. (Isaiah 14:4-23)
= Webster's 1965 ed: the morning star (**incorrect**), a fallen rebel archangel, the Devil
= Funk & Wagnalls 1966 ed: the archangel who led the revolt of the angels and fell from Heaven, identified as Satan (Funk & Wagnalls also defines Lucifer as the planet Venus when it appears as the morning star)
= HYLL (Hebrew phonetic spelling of heylel, also the etymological origin of word "hell")
= he(5) + yod(10) + lamed(30) + lamed(30)
= 75
= Exodus 25 (75th chapter of OT)
= Numbers 33 (75x2 = 150th chapter of OT)
= Judges 14 (75x3 = 225th chapter of OT)
= John 7 (75th chapter of NT)
= 2 Corinthians 1 (75x2 = 150th chapter of NT)
= 1 Peter 3 (75x3 = 225th chapter of NT)

Here are the verses from Exodus 25, Numbers 33, Judges 14, John 7, 2 Corinthians 1, and 1 Peter 3 (chapters for Lucifer the archangel); also, Exodus 28, a shadow chapter. The key words are underlined subjectively:

³And this is the offering which ye shall take of them; gold, and silver, and brass, ⁴And blue, and purple, and scarlet, and fine linen, and goats' hair, ⁵And rams' skins dyed red, and badgers' skins, and shittim wood, ⁶Oil for the light, spices for anointing oil, and for sweet incense, ⁷Onyx stones, and stones to be set in the ephod, and in the breastplate. ⁸And let them make me a sanctuary; that I may dwell among them. ⁹According to all that I show thee, after the pattern of the tabernacle, and the pattern of all the instruments thereof, even so shall ye make it." Exodus 25:3-9

¹⁸And thou shalt make two cherubims of gold, of beaten work shalt thou make them, in the two ends of the mercy seat. ¹⁹And make one cherub on the one end, and the other cherub on the other end: even of the mercy seat shall ye make the cherubims on the two ends thereof. ²⁰And the cherubims shall stretch forth their wings on high, covering the mercy seat with their wings, and their faces shall look one to another; toward the mercy seat shall the faces of the cherubims be. ²¹And thou shalt put the mercy seat above upon the ark; and in the ark thou shalt put the testimony that I shall give thee." Exodus 25:18-21

³⁷And thou shalt make the seven lamps thereof: and they shall light the lamps thereof, that they may give light over against it." Exodus 25:37

²And thou shalt make holy garments for Aaron thy brother for glory and for beauty. ³And thou shalt speak unto all that are wise hearted, whom I have filled with the spirit of wisdom, that they may make Aaron's garments to consecrate him, that he may minister unto me in the priest's office. ⁴And these are the garments which they shall make; a breastplate, and an ephod, and a robe, and a brodered coat, a mitre, and a girdle: and they shall make holy garments for Aaron thy brother, and his sons, that he may minister unto me in the priest's office. ⁵And they shall take gold, and blue, and purple, and scarlet, and fine linen." Exodus 28:2-5

(shadow chapter)

¹⁵And thou shalt make the breastplate of judgment with cunning work; after the work of the ephod thou shalt make it; of gold, of blue, and of purple, and of scarlet, and of fine twined linen, shalt thou make it. ¹⁶Foursquare it shall be being doubled; a span shall be the length thereof, and a span shall be the breadth thereof. ¹⁷And thou shalt set in it settings of stones, even four rows of stones: the first row shall be a sardius, a topaz, and a carbuncle: this shall be the first row. ¹⁸And the second row shall be an emerald, a sapphire, and a diamond. ¹⁹And the third row a ligure, an agate, and an amethyst. ²⁰And the

CHAPTER 27

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

fourth row a beryl, and an onyx, and a jasper: they shall be set in gold in their inclosings. ²¹And the stones shall be with the names of the children of Israel, twelve, according to their names, *like* the engravings of a signet; every one with his name shall they be according to the twelve tribes.”

Exodus 28:15-21
(shadow chapter)

Comment: in these verses from Exodus, especially chapter 28, the reader is invited to replace the name of Aaron with Lucifer. We can then see the parallel description of Lucifer with Ezekiel 28, where every precious stone was his covering and that he held the office of priest, the personal minister unto the LORD. The breastplate of precious stones represented the twelve tribes of Israel. Then iniquity was found in Lucifer by the multitude of his merchandise. Lucifer's sin against the LORD was the ultimate act of betrayal. In Isaiah 14 and Ezekiel 28 we see the sin described in some detail. The pattern repeats with Judas, a type of priest, who gets offended and then betrays Jesus for money. Lucifer had responsibility with gold and Judas was responsible for the moneybag. Again the pattern repeats with Aaron, who was in the priest's office, betraying Moses by making a golden calf with the gold he took from the people. If someone wants to examine the maturity level of any person of God, see how they handle money or power. If they have any issues in this area, they are not to be entrusted with the holy things of the LORD, including leadership.

“²⁹And Aaron shall bear the names of the children of Israel in the breastplate of judgment upon his heart, when he goeth in unto the holy place, for a memorial before the LORD continually. ³⁰And thou shalt put in the breastplate of judgment the Urim and the Thummim; and they shall be upon Aaron's heart, when he goeth in before the LORD: and Aaron shall bear the judgment of the children of Israel upon his heart before the LORD continually.”
Exodus 28:29-30 (shadow ch.)

Comment: Urim = “lights”, the oracular brilliancy of the figures of the breastplate (Strong's 224),
Thummim = “perfections”, one of the epithets of objects in the breastplate as an emblem of complete truth (Strong's 8550).

“³⁴A golden bell and a pomegranate, a golden bell and a pomegranate, upon the hem of the robe round about. ³⁵And it shall be upon Aaron to minister: and his sound shall be heard when he goeth in unto the holy place before the LORD, and when he cometh out, that he die not. ³⁶And thou shalt make a plate of pure gold, and grave upon it, *like* the engravings of a signet, HOLINESS TO THE LORD. ³⁷And thou shalt put it on a blue lace, that it may be upon the mitre; upon the forefront of the mitre it shall be. ³⁸And it shall be upon Aaron's forehead, that Aaron may bear the iniquity of the holy things, which the children of Israel shall hallow in all their holy gifts; and it shall be always upon his forehead, that they may be accepted before the LORD.”
Exodus 28:34-38 (shadow ch.)

Comment: in verse 37 above notice that he wore a mitre upon his head.

Question: which leading religious figure in the world today wears a mitre upon his head and is adorned in gold, purple, and scarlet and whose primary business is banking? He lives in Rome. It has been said that on his mitre are inscribed the words: *Vicarius Filii Dei* (Latin for "Vicar of the Son of God"). The context of the inscription is that he is the substitute for God.

“³⁸And Aaron the priest went up into mount Hor at the commandment of the LORD, and died there, in the fortieth year after the children of Israel were come out of the land of Egypt, in the first day of the fifth month. ³⁹And Aaron was an hundred and twenty and three years old when he died in mount Hor.”
Numbers 33:38-39

“⁵¹Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, When ye are passed over Jordan into the land of Canaan; ⁵²Then ye shall drive out all the inhabitants of the land from before you, and destroy all their pictures, and destroy all their molten images, and quite pluck down all their high places. ⁵³And ye shall dispossess *the inhabitants* of the land, and dwell therein: for I have given you the land to possess it.”
Numbers 33:51-53

CHAPTER 27

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

Comment: the verses from Numbers 33 appear to illustrate that when Lucifer sinned in God's holy mountain, he spiritually "died" there and was removed and is consequently destined for the lake of fire. After his sin, every remnant of Lucifer's idolatry was removed out of God's 3rd heaven. To this day, Lucifer/Satan erects the same type of idolatry wherever he can throughout the earth.

¹And Samson went down to Timnath, and saw a woman in Timnath of the daughters of the Philistines. ²And he came up, and told his father and his mother, and said, I have seen a woman in Timnath of the daughters of the Philistines: now therefore get her for me to wife. ³Then his father and his mother said unto him, *Is there* never a woman among the daughters of thy brethren, or among all my people, that thou goest to take a wife of the uncircumcised Philistines? And Samson said unto his father, Get her for me; for she pleaseth me well." Judges 14:1-3

Comment: the verses of Judges 14 appear to say that while Lucifer was in 3rd heaven he began to want a "wife". He may have caught on to God's redemptive plan of saving a remnant out of an "uncircumcised" people to present as a bride for Jesus, even though Adam had not yet been created. Lucifer may have gotten jealous and wanted a people for himself and that is why, after he was kicked out of 3rd heaven, his fallen angels began taking wives from earthly men, see Genesis 6, and continue to do so unto this present day. So, the theme of Judges 14 appears to match Isaiah 14: "I will sit upon the mount of the congregation" (I want a people).

¹After these things Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jewry, because the Jews sought to kill him. ⁶Then Jesus said unto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is always ready. ⁷The world cannot hate you; but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil. ⁸Go ye up unto this feast: I go not up yet unto this feast; for my time is not yet full come. ⁹When he had said these words unto them, he abode *still* in Galilee.

¹⁶Jesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me. ¹⁷If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or *whether* I speak of myself. ¹⁸He that speaketh of himself seeketh his own glory: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him. ¹⁹Did not Moses give you the law, and yet none of you keepeth the law? Why go ye about to kill me?

³³Then said Jesus unto them, Yet a little while am I with you, and then I go unto him that sent me. ³⁴Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, *thither* ye cannot come. ³⁵Then said the Jews among themselves, Whither will he go, that we shall not find him? will he go unto the dispersed among the Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles? ³⁶What *manner* of saying is this that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, thither ye cannot come?" John 7:1, 6-9, 6-19, 33-36

²¹Then said Jesus again unto them, I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins: *whither* I go, ye cannot come. ²²Then said the Jews, Will he kill himself? because he saith, Whither I go, ye cannot come. ²³And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world. ²⁴I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am he, ye shall die in your sins.

⁴⁴Ye are of *your father* the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. ⁴⁵And because I tell *you* the truth, ye believe me not." John 8:21-24, 44-45 (shadow)

Comment: in these verses of John, it is apparent that when Jesus first perceived iniquity in Lucifer, He announced to him that there would be a complete and permanent separation of their relationship forever. Lucifer may not have fully appreciated the complete separation part but he did understand that they would be enemies now.

⁵For as the sufferings of Christ abound in us, so our consolation also aboundeth by Christ. ⁶And whether we be afflicted, *it is* for your consolation and salvation, which is effectual in the enduring of the same

CHAPTER 27

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

sufferings which we also suffer: or whether we be comforted, *it is* for your consolation and salvation. ⁷And our hope of you *is* stedfast, knowing, that as ye are partakers of the sufferings, so *shall ye be also of the consolation*. ⁸For we would not, brethren, have you ignorant of our trouble which came to us in Asia, that we were pressed out of measure, above strength, insomuch that we despaired even of life:

⁹But we had the sentence of death in ourselves, that we should not trust in ourselves, but in God which raiseth the dead: ¹⁰Who delivered us from so great a death, and doth deliver: in whom we trust that he will yet deliver us;" 2 Corinthians 1:5-10

Comment: in these scriptures from 2 Corinthians 1, it appears to reveal that Lucifer experienced emotional suffering after his fall from grace, knowing that he had the sentence of death. Until his death in Revelation 20:10, he will continue to experience suffering, in contrast to God's people who suffer with the promise of being delivered from death; even a resurrection, and are thus comforted. Lucifer/Satan can never have this hope of eventual comfort and consolation.

¹Likewise, ye wives, *be* in subjection to your own husbands; that, if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives; ²While they behold your chaste conversation *coupled with fear*. ³Whose adorning let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel; ⁴But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, *even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit*, which is in the sight of God of great price. ⁵For after this manner in the old time the holy women also, who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands: ⁶Even as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord: whose daughters ye are, as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement. ⁷Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with *them* according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered." 1 Peter 3:1-7

Comment: in the above verses from 1 Peter 3, we see a confirmation that Lucifer was distinguished by his outward beauty but the character flaw of iniquity in his inward personality was his undoing.

Here is another Infinity Bible Code number related to Lucifer:

"How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, **son of the morning!** *how* art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! ...But thou art cast out of thy grave like an abominable branch, *and as* the raiment of those that are slain, thrust through with a sword, that go down to the stones of the pit; as a carcase trodden under feet." Isaiah 14:12,19

stones of the pit = brimstone = 693

Isaiah 14 = 693rd chapter of OT

693 = 666 + 33

666th chapter of OT + 33rd chapter of NT = Ecclesiastes 7 + Mark 5

"For wisdom *is* a defence, *and* money *is* a defence: but the excellency of knowledge *is*, *that* wisdom giveth life to them that have it." (Numerical value of excellency = 666) Ecclesiastes 7:12

²And when he was come out of the ship, immediately there met him out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit, ³Who had *his* dwelling among the tombs; and no man could bind him, no, not with chains: ⁴Because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any *man* tame him. ⁵And always, night and day, he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himself with stones. ⁶But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran and worshipped him, ⁷And cried with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, *thou* Son of the most high God? I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not. ⁸For he said unto him, **Come out of the man, thou unclean spirit.** ⁹And he asked him, **What is thy name?** And he answered, saying, My name is Legion: for we are many. ¹⁰And he besought him much that he would not

CHAPTER 27

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

send them away out of the country. ¹¹Now there was there nigh unto the mountains a great herd of swine feeding. ¹²And all the devils besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them. ¹³And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand;) and were choked in the sea."
Mark 5:2-13

Here are other verses concerning Lucifer. See how closely they match the key words of Exodus 25 & 28:

"¹¹Moreover the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, ¹²Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyrus, and say unto him, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Thou sealest up the sum, full of wisdom, and perfect in beauty. ¹³Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created. ¹⁴Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. ¹⁵Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee. ¹⁶By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned: therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy thee, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire. ¹⁷Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness: I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings, that they may behold thee. ¹⁸Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the iniquity of thy traffic; therefore will I bring forth a fire from the midst of thee, it shall devour thee, and I will bring thee to ashes upon the earth in the sight of all them that behold thee. ¹⁹All they that know thee among the people shall be astonished at thee: thou shalt be a terror, and never *shalt* thou *be* any more."
Ezekiel 28:11-19

ARCHANGEL DISCUSSION

There appears to be a possible comparison of the three archangels with the three apostles of Jesus: Peter, James, and John. The three archangels served the LORD in leadership roles. Jesus often took Peter, James, and John with him up to the mountains as a type of leadership council (Matthew 17:1, Luke 9:28, Mark 14:32-33).

Michael the archangel is associated with swinging the sword of judgment and with the resurrection. He is also known as the great prince of the children of the people of Israel. Peter was known to have swung the sword (he cut off an ear in John 18:10) and he prayed for a woman named Tabitha and she came back to life (Acts 9:40). Peter was also the apostle sent with the gospel to the Jews (and Paul to the Gentiles, Gal. 2:7). However, Peter denied Jesus three times but he didn't betray Jesus. The Bible is very specific that the only disciple that betrayed Jesus was Judas Iscariot. There is one instance where Michael and Peter are actually in the same place together when the archangel Michael smote Peter on the side to wake him when he was helping him escape from prison (Acts 12:7).

Gabriel the archangel is associated with bringing very important messages and prophetic revelations to certain people of God. There is not a lot of information on the apostle James but the Lord did use him to write the epistle of James and share important messages on patience, wisdom, temptation, sanctification, and pure religion. Herod did have James killed with the sword (Acts 12:1) and in the book of Matthew there is another Herod who wants to kill Jesus but the angel of the Lord appears to Joseph in a dream and instructs him to flee to Egypt with his family (Matt. 2:13). The angel was Gabriel because he had already appeared to Joseph and Mary to give them the news that the baby's name would be JESUS (Matt. 1:18-25, Luke 1:26-38). So, Gabriel and James had the person named Herod in common.

As discussed in a previous section, Lucifer the archangel is associated with having been the personal minister unto the LORD. The apostle John is associated with being the one whom Jesus loved (John 13:23-25, 19:26, 20:2). The same was also said of Lazarus (John 11:5); however, John was the one who

CHAPTER 27

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

would lay his head on the Lord's chest. John was a type of personal minister to Jesus and it could be that he was the closest one to Him. John was also the one who asked Jesus who it was that would betray him. John never betrayed Jesus but Lucifer did. This is a grave lesson for anyone with a personal minister or in the role of personal minister: guard against betrayal.

In the book of Revelation judgment falls upon the third part of creation and it signifies the corruption associated with the third part of the angels that fell from grace. Other patterns for consideration are:

Three brothers: Cain, Abel, & Seth; one fell from grace (Cain).
Three archangels: Lucifer, Gabriel, & Michael; one fell from grace.
Cain / Lucifer = tiller of the ground, keeper of the earth.
Abel / Gabriel = keeper of the sheep.
Seth / Michael = patriarch of the generations of Israel.
Three other brothers: Shem, Ham, Japheth; one fell from grace (Ham).

JESUS

A description of Jesus from the scriptures includes such words as "Wonderful", "Counsellor", "The mighty God", "The everlasting Father", "The Prince of Peace", "Christ the Lord", "Immanuel", "Son of God", "I am the way, the truth, and the life", "I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last.", "I am he that liveth, and was dead", "the Lion of the tribe of Juda", "I am the root and the offspring of David", "the Lamb that was slain", and "the bright and morning star".

The Old Testament does talk about Jesus and it also refers to occasions when He is manifest in the spirit, which we see in certain of the following verses:

Psalms 2:7 "...the LORD hath said unto me, Thou art my Son; this day have I begotten thee."
Psalms 2:12 "Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way..."
Proverbs 30:4-6 "Who hath ascended up into heaven, or descended? who hath gathered the wind in his fists? who hath bound the waters in a garment? who hath established all the ends of the earth? what is his name, and what is his son's name, if thou canst tell?
Every word of God is pure: he is a shield unto them that put their trust in him. Add thou not unto his words, lest he reprove thee, and thou be found a liar."
Daniel 3:25 "...the form of the fourth is like the Son of God."
Daniel 7:13 "...behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days..."
Daniel 8:15-16 "...behold, there stood before me as the appearance of a man. And I heard a man's voice between the banks of Ulai, which called, and said, Gabriel, make this man to understand the vision."

Jesus is not an archangel and had no "brothers". He is the only begotten (John 3:16), He is the Word, He is the creator of all things, and the archangels are His creation (John 1:1-3,14).

Verses concerning JESUS:

"And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations: And he shall rule them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers: even as I received of my Father. And I will give him the morning star." Revelation 2:26-28

"I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star." Revelation 22:16

CHAPTER 27

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

OTHER

The next chapter discusses other spiritual beings such as the Cherubim and Seraphim, and Chapter 29 continues the discussion with a review of Ezekiel 10 and John 10. Chapter 30, Four Door, contains additional deep insights on the four beasts and their revelation of the attributes of Jesus.

THE BIBLE PATTERN

In the Bible pattern that follows, Luke 1 contains three sections of scripture that line up with each other and line up with Judges 13 to form a pattern match concerning the visitation of the angel Gabriel with the families of John the Baptist, Jesus, and Samson. The same pattern of events takes place. The angel tells the barren wives that they will have a son. The child is to be set apart as a Nazarite for the Lord's service. The pattern shows that Manoah's wife was visited by the angel when her husband was not there and this matches Eve's visitation by the serpent when her husband Adam was not there. The danger of the forbidden fruit of wrong knowledge is that it is a bad seed that tries to take root in the soul to prevent the seed of promise and prevent the seed of truth from bringing forth the fruit of the Holy Spirit. The significance of the wine or strong drink is the impairment of judgment in doing the right thing. In a drunken moment of "weakness", the wrong thing can take place; thus, the necessity of the law of the Nazarite (Numbers 6:1-21), which is holy consecration of one's self unto the Lord so He can do great and mighty things through us. A bad seed can spring forth a spiritual vine of philosophy that is not biblical, not holy. A good spiritual vine results in a philosophy of holy biblical values.

Samuel 10 also has three sections of scripture that line up with each other. As discussed previously, the number of this Bible chapter also matches the number for Gabriel so it is a chapter for the archangel Gabriel. The attributes of nobility that describe Saul in this chapter also describe Gabriel.

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 1:

¹Forasmuch as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among us,

²Even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eyewitnesses, and ministers of the word;

³It seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus,

⁴That thou mightest know the certainty of those things, wherein thou hast been instructed.

⁵There was in the days of Herod, the king of Judaea, ...a certain priest named Zacharias,

...of the course of Abia:

(*Abia = Strong's 29, "worshipper of Jah"*)

...and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabeth.

⁶And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless.

⁷And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren, and they both were *now* well stricken in years.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

²⁶And in the sixth month ...the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth,

(←*Theophilus = Strong's 2321, "friend of God"*)

²⁷To a virgin espoused to

...a man whose name was Joseph,

...of the house of David;

...and the virgin's name was Mary.

3RD WITNESS

(←*Gabriel = Strong's 1403, "man of God", an archangel*)

LUKE 1:

⁴⁶And Mary said, My soul doth magnify the Lord,

⁴⁷And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.

⁴⁸For he hath regarded ...the low estate of his handmaiden:

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 1:

⁸And it came to pass, that while he executed the priest's office before God in the order of his course,

⁹According to the custom of the priest's office, his lot was to burn incense when he went into the temple of the Lord.

¹⁰And the whole multitude of the people were praying without at the time of incense.

¹¹And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord standing on the right side of the altar of incense.

¹²And when Zacharias saw him, he was troubled, and fear fell upon him.

¹³But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias:

...for thy prayer is heard;
(*heard by God*)

...and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son,

...and thou shalt call his name John.

¹⁴And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and many shall rejoice at his birth.

¹⁵For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb.

¹⁶And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God.

LUKE 1:

²⁸And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail, *thou that art* highly favoured, the Lord *is* with thee:

...blessed art thou among women.

²⁹And when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this should be.

³⁰And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary:

...for thou hast found favour with God.

³¹And, behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son

...and shalt call his name JESUS.

(←*Gabriel*)

LUKE 1:

⁴⁸...for, behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed.

⁴⁹For he that is mighty

...hath done to me great things;

...and holy *is* his name.

⁵⁰And his mercy *is* on ...them that fear him from generation to generation.

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 1:

¹⁷And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias,

...to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children,

...and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just;

...to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.

¹⁸And Zacharias said unto the angel,

...Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years.

¹⁹And the angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God;

...and am sent to speak unto thee, and to show thee these glad tidings.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

³²He shall be great,

...and shall be called the Son of the Highest:

...and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David:

³³And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever;

...and of his kingdom there shall be no end.

³⁴Then said Mary unto the angel,

...How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?

³⁵And the angel answered and said unto her,

...The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee,
...and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee:

...therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God.

³⁶And, behold, thy cousin Elisabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age: and this is the sixth month with her, who was called barren.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 1:

⁵¹He hath showed strength with his arm;

...he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts.

⁵²He hath put down the mighty from their seats, and exalted them of low degree.

⁵³He hath filled the hungry with good things; and the rich he hath sent empty away.

⁵⁴He hath holpen his servant Israel, in remembrance of his mercy;

⁵⁵As he spake to our fathers, to Abraham,

...and to his seed for ever.

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 1:

²⁰And, behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed,

...because thou believest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.

²¹And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple.

²²And when he came out,

...he could not speak unto them:

...and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple:

...for he beckoned unto them, and remained speechless.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

³⁷For with God nothing shall be impossible.

³⁸And Mary said, Behold the handmaid of the Lord;

...be it unto me according to thy word. And the angel departed from her.

³⁹And Mary arose in those days, and went into the hill country with haste, into a city of Juda;

⁴⁰And entered into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabeth.

⁴¹And it came to pass, that, when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary,

...the babe leaped in her womb; and Elisabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost:

⁴²And she spake out with a loud voice...

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 1:

⁵⁶And Mary abode with her about three months, and returned to her own house.

⁵⁷Now Elisabeth's full time came that she should be delivered; and she brought forth a son.

⁵⁸And her neighbours and her cousins heard how the Lord had showed great mercy upon her; and they rejoiced with her.

⁵⁹And it came to pass, that ...on the eighth day

they came to circumcise the child; and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.

⁶⁰And his mother answered and said, Not so;

...but he shall be called John.

⁶¹And they said unto her, There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name.

⁶²And they made signs to his father, how he would have him called.

⁶³And he asked for a writing table, and wrote, saying, His name is John. And they marvelled all.

⁶⁴And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue loosed, and he spake, and praised God.

⁶⁵And fear came on all that dwelt round about them: and all these sayings were noised abroad throughout all the hill country of Judaea.

⁶⁶And all they that heard *them* laid *them* up in their hearts, saying, What manner of child shall this be! And the hand of the Lord was with him.

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 1:

²³And it came to pass, that, as soon as the days of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his own house.

²⁴And after those days his wife Elisabeth conceived, and hid herself five months, saying,

²⁵Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the days wherein he looked on *me*,

...to take away my reproach among men.

2ND WITNESS

LUKE 1:

(←*ministration* = Strong's 3009, "public function or priestly service")

⁴²...and said, Blessed *art* thou among women, and blessed *is* the fruit of thy womb.

⁴³And whence *is* this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come to me?

⁴⁴For, lo, as soon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy.

⁴⁵And blessed is she that believed: for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her from the Lord.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 1:

⁶⁷And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying,

⁶⁸Blessed *be* the Lord God of Israel; for he hath visited and redeemed his people,

⁶⁹And hath raised up an horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David;

⁷⁰As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, which have been since the world began:

⁷¹That we should be saved from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us;

⁷²To perform the mercy *promised* to our fathers, and to remember his holy covenant;

⁷³The oath which he sware to our father Abraham,

⁷⁴That he would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hand of our enemies might serve him without fear,

⁷⁵In holiness and righteousness before him, all the days of our life.

⁷⁶And thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the Highest: for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to prepare his ways;

⁷⁷To give knowledge of salvation unto his people by the remission of their sins,

⁷⁸Through the tender mercy of our God; whereby the dayspring from on high hath visited us,

⁷⁹To give light to them that sit in darkness and *in* the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace.

⁸⁰And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his showing unto Israel.

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 1:

¹Forasmuch as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among

us,

²Even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eyewitnesses, and ministers of the word;

³It seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus,

⁴That thou mightest know the certainty of those things, wherein thou hast been instructed.

⁵There was in the days of Herod, the king of Judaea, ...a certain priest named Zacharias,

...of the course of Abia:

...and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabeth.

⁶And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless.

⁷And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren, and they both were *now* well stricken in years.

⁸And it came to pass, that while he executed the priest's office before God in the order of his course,

⁹According to the custom of the priest's office, his lot was to burn incense when he went into the temple of the Lord.

¹⁰And the whole multitude of the people were praying without at the time of incense.

JUDGES 13:

JUDGES 13:

¹And the children of Israel did evil again in the sight of the LORD;

...and the LORD delivered them into the hand of the Philistines forty years.

²And there was ...a certain man of Zorah,

...of the family of the Danites, whose name was Manoah;

...and his wife was barren, and bare not.

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 1:

¹¹And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord standing on the right side of the altar of incense.

¹²And when Zacharias saw him, he was troubled, and fear fell upon him.

¹³But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias:

...for thy prayer is heard;

...and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son,

..and thou shalt call his name John.

¹⁴And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and many shall rejoice at his birth.

¹⁵For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall

...be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb.

¹⁶And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God.

¹⁷And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias...

("And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not." John 1:21a)

2ND WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

³And the angel of the LORD appeared unto the woman, and said unto her,

...Behold now, thou *art* barren, and bearest not: but thou shalt conceive, and bear a son. (*Samson*)

(Samson = Strong's 8123, from 8121 "sunlight")

⁴Now therefore beware, I pray thee, and drink not wine nor strong drink, and eat not any unclean *thing*:

⁵For, lo, thou shalt conceive, and bear a son; and no razor shall come on his head: for the child shall be a Nazarite unto God from the womb:

(Nazarite = Strong's 5139, "a vine undressed or unpruned", context is to be consecrated apart)

...and he shall begin to deliver Israel out of the hand of the Philistines.

⁸Then Manoah entreated the LORD, and said, O my Lord,

...let the man of God which thou didst send come again unto us,

("Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the LORD." Malachi 4:5)

3RD WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

⁶Then the woman came and told her husband, saying, A man of God came unto me,

...and his countenance

...*was* like the countenance of an angel of God, very terrible:

...but I asked him not whence he was, neither told he me his name:

⁷But he said unto me, Behold, thou shalt conceive, and bear a son;

...and now drink no wine nor strong drink, neither eat any unclean *thing*:

...for the child shall be ...a Nazarite to God from the womb to the day of his death.

(Ref. Numbers 6:1-21 for the law of the Nazarite.)

¹¹And Manoah arose, and went after his wife, and came to the man, and said unto him,

...Art thou the man that spakest unto the woman? And he said, *I am*.

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 1:

¹⁷...to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children,

...and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just;

("And when the woman saw that the → tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat." Genesis 3:6)

...to make ready a people

...prepared for the Lord.

¹⁸And Zacharias said unto the angel,

...Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years.

¹⁹And the angel answering said unto him,

...I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God; and am sent to speak unto thee, and to show thee these glad tidings.

²⁰And, behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed,
...because thou believest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.

2ND WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

⁸...and teach us what we shall do unto the child that shall be born.

⁹And God hearkened to the voice of Manoah; and the angel of God came again

...unto the woman

...as she sat in the field: but Manoah her husband was not with her.

¹⁰And the woman made haste, and ran, and showed her husband, and said unto him, Behold, the man hath appeared unto me, that came unto me the *other* day.

("The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world." John 1:29)

3RD WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

¹²And Manoah said, Now let thy words come to pass. How shall we order the child, and how shall we do unto him?

¹³And the angel of the LORD said unto Manoah, Of all that I said

...unto the woman

...let her beware.

¹⁴She may not eat of any thing that cometh of the vine, neither let her drink wine or strong drink, nor eat any unclean *thing*: all that I commanded her let her observe.

¹⁵And Manoah said unto the angel of the LORD, I pray thee, let us detain thee, until we shall have made ready a kid for thee.

¹⁶And the angel of the LORD said unto Manoah, Though thou detain me, I will not eat of thy bread: and if thou wilt offer a burnt offering, thou must offer it unto the LORD. For Manoah knew not that he was an angel of the LORD.

¹⁷And Manoah said unto the angel of the LORD,

...What is thy name, that when thy sayings come to pass we may do thee honour?

¹⁸And the angel of the LORD said unto him,

...Why askest thou thus after my name

...seeing it is secret?

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 1:

²¹And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple.

²²And when he came out, he could not speak unto them: and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple:

...for he beckoned unto them, and remained speechless.

²³And it came to pass, that, as soon as the days of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his own house.

²⁴And after those days his wife Elisabeth conceived, and hid herself five months, saying,

²⁵Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the days wherein he looked on *me*,

...to take away my reproach among men.

2ND WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

3RD WITNESS

JUDGES 13:

¹⁹So Manoah took a kid with a meat offering, and offered *it* upon a rock unto the LORD: and *the angel* did wondrously; and Manoah and his wife looked on.

²⁰For it came to pass, when the flame went up toward heaven from off the altar,

...that the angel of the LORD ascended in the flame of the altar. And Manoah and his wife looked on *it*, and

...fell on their faces to the ground.

²¹But the angel of the LORD did no more appear to Manoah and to his wife. Then Manoah knew that he was an angel of the LORD.

²²And Manoah said unto his wife, We shall surely die, because we have seen God.

²³But his wife said unto him, If the LORD were pleased to kill us, he would not have received a burnt offering and a meat offering at our hands, neither would he have showed us all these *things*, nor would as at this time have told us *such things* as these.

²⁴And the woman bare a son, and called his name Samson: and the child grew,

...and the LORD

... blessed him.

²⁵And the Spirit of the LORD began to move him at times in the camp of Dan between Zorah and Eshtaol.

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

1ST WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 10:

¹Then Samuel took a vial of oil, and poured *it* upon his head, and kissed him, and said, *Is it not because the LORD hath anointed thee to be captain over his inheritance?*

²When thou art departed from me to day, then thou shalt find **two men** by Rachel's sepulchre in the border of Benjamin at Zelzah; and they will say unto thee, The asses which thou wentest to seek are found: and, lo,

...thy father hath left the care of the asses, and sorroweth for you, saying, What shall I do for my son?

³Then shalt thou go on forward from thence, and thou shalt come to the plain of Tabor, and there shall meet thee **three men** going up to God to Bethel, one carrying three kids, and another carrying three loaves of bread, and another carrying a bottle of wine:

⁴And they will salute thee, and give thee two *loaves* of bread; which thou shalt receive of their hands.

⁵After that thou shalt come to the hill of God, where *is* the garrison of the Philistines: and it shall come to pass, when thou art come thither to the city, that thou shalt meet a company of prophets coming down

...from the high place with a psaltery, and a tabret, and a pipe, and a harp, before them; and they shall prophesy:

2ND WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 10:

⁹And it was so, that when he had turned his back to go from Samuel, God gave him another heart: and all those signs came to pass that day.

¹⁰And when they came thither to the hill, behold, a company of prophets met him; and the Spirit of God came upon him, and he prophesied among them.

¹¹And it came to pass, when all that knew him beforetime saw that, behold, he prophesied among the prophets, then the people said one to another, *What is this that is come unto the son of Kish?* ...Is Saul also among the prophets?

¹²And one of the same place answered and said, But who is their father?

...Therefore it became a proverb, *Is Saul also among the prophets?*

¹³And when he had made an end of prophesying, he came to the high place.

3RD WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 10:

¹⁹And ye have this day rejected your God, who himself saved you out of all your adversities and your tribulations; and ye have said unto him, *Nay*, but set a king over us. Now therefore present yourselves before the LORD by your tribes, and by your thousands.

²⁰And when Samuel had caused all the tribes of Israel to come near, the tribe of Benjamin was taken.

²¹When he had caused the tribe of Benjamin to come near by their families, the family of Matri was taken, and Saul the son of Kish was taken: and when they sought him, he could not be found.

²²Therefore they inquired of the LORD further, if the man should yet come thither.

...And the LORD answered, Behold, he hath hid himself among the stuff.

²³And they ran and fetched him thence: and when he stood among the people, he was higher than any of the people from his shoulders and upward.

ANGELS & ARCHANGELS

1ST WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 10:

⁶And the Spirit of the LORD will come upon thee, and thou shalt prophesy with them, and shalt be turned into another man.

⁷And let it be, when these signs are come unto thee, *that* thou do as occasion serve thee; for God *is* with thee.

⁸And thou shalt go down before me to Gilgal; and, behold, I will come down unto thee, to offer burnt offerings, *and* to sacrifice sacrifices of peace offerings: seven days shalt thou tarry, till I come to thee, and show thee what thou shalt do.

2ND WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 10:

¹⁴And Saul's uncle said unto him and to his servant, Whither went ye? And he said, To seek the asses: and when we saw that *they were* no where, we came to Samuel.

¹⁵And Saul's uncle said, Tell me, I pray thee, what Samuel said unto you.

¹⁶And Saul said unto his uncle, He told us plainly that the asses were found. But of the matter of the kingdom, whereof Samuel spake, he told him not.

(← Verses 6-8 explain the "matter of the kingdom")

¹⁷And Samuel called the people together unto the LORD to Mizpeh;

¹⁸And said unto the children of Israel, Thus saith the LORD God of Israel, I brought up Israel out of Egypt, and delivered you out of the hand of the Egyptians, and out of the hand of all kingdoms, *and* of them that oppressed you:

3RD WITNESS

1 SAMUEL 10:

²⁴And Samuel said to all the people, See ye him whom the LORD hath chosen, that *there is* none like him among all the people? And all the people shouted, and said, God save the king.

²⁵Then Samuel told the people the manner of the kingdom, and wrote it in a book, and laid *it* up before the LORD.

...And Samuel sent all the people away, every man to his house.

²⁶And Saul also went home to Gibeah; and there went with him a band of men, whose hearts God had touched.

²⁷But the children of Belial said, How shall this man save us? And they despised him, and brought him no presents. But he held his peace.

CHAPTER 28

SERAPHIM & CHERUBIM

It is important to understand that the eyewitness account of Ezekiel appears to be an attempt to describe the throne room and the glory of it and also of the four living creatures and their wheels. It is even more important to understand that the account in the Bible is an exact archive of how God wanted it described. In other words, the carnal-thinking person would say that Ezekiel wrote an approximate description of what he saw. However, the spiritual-thinking person would realize that God wanted these exact words used in the description of Ezekiel's experience. THE BIBLE DOES NOT WASTE OR MISUSE WORDS. Let that revelation sink in for a moment.

Many times in the prophetic scriptures of the Bible, symbology is used to portray beings, things, kingdoms, etc. Sometimes what appears to be symbology is actually a situation where words are inadequate to describe spiritual things. Thus, in many cases the words "like" or "as" will be used when describing the indescribable.

In the following pattern there are four columns that match-up the chapters of Isaiah 6, Ezekiel 1, Ezekiel 10, and Revelation 4 concerning creatures known as seraphim and cherubim. Ezekiel 1 verses were kept in sequential order while verses in the other columns are not in sequence, in order to match them with Ezekiel 1 verses. The result is a comparison of the two types of creatures and their similarities:

<u>Isaiah 6</u>	<u>Ezekiel 1</u>	<u>Ezekiel 10</u>	<u>Revelation 4</u>
---	by the river Chebar	by the river Chebar	---
seraphims	4 living creatures - the likeness of a man	cherubims, living creature	4 beasts (seraphims?)
6 wings each - 2 wings cover their face - 2 wings used to fly with - 2 wings cover their bodies	4 wings each - 2 wings joined with the others and stretched upward (with a man's hand under their wings) - 2 wings cover their bodies	4 wings each - with a man's hand under their wings	6 wings each
---	a wheel within a wheel - color of beryl - they turned not when they went - with the spirit of the living creature	a wheel within a wheel - color of a beryl stone - they turned not as they went - with the spirit of the living creature	---
---	their rings were full of eyes	their body, backs, hands, wings, & wheels were full of eyes	the four beasts full of eyes before & behind
---	4 faces each - a man - a lion - an ox - an eagle	4 faces each - a cherub - a man - a lion - an eagle	4 beasts - 1 st like a lion - 2 nd like a calf - 3 rd like a man - 4 th like a flying eagle
located above the throne	beneath the throne (supporting it?)	beneath the throne (supporting it?)	in the midst of the throne & round about the throne

SERAPHIM & CHERUBIM

1ST WITNESS

ISAIAH 6:
(verses out of sequence)

²Above it stood the seraphims: each one had six wings;

³And one cried unto another, and said, Holy, holy, holy, is the LORD of hosts: the whole earth is full of his glory.

2ND WITNESS

EZEKIEL 1:

³The word of the LORD came expressly unto Ezekiel the priest, the son of Buzi, in the land of the Chaldeans by the river Chebar; and the hand of the LORD was there upon him.

⁴And I looked, and, behold, a whirlwind came out of the north, a great cloud, and a fire infolding itself, and a brightness was about it, and out of the midst thereof as the colour of amber, out of the midst of the fire.

⁵Also out of the midst thereof came the likeness of four living creatures. And this was their appearance; they had the likeness of a man.

⁶And every one had four faces, and every one had four wings.

⁷And their feet were straight feet; and the sole of their feet was like the sole of a calf's foot: and they sparkled like the colour of burnished brass.

⁸And they had the hands of a man under their wings on their four sides; and they four had their faces and their wings.

⁹Their wings were joined one to another;

...they turned not when they went; they went every one straight forward.

3RD WITNESS

EZEKIEL 10:
(verses out of sequence)

¹⁵And the cherubims were lifted up. This *is* the living creature that I saw by the river of Chebar.

²¹Every one had four faces apiece, and every one four wings;

...and the likeness of the hands of a man was under their wings.

⁸And there appeared in the cherubims the form of a man's hand under their wings.

²²And the likeness of their faces was the same faces which I saw by the river of Chebar, their appearances and themselves: they went every one straight forward.

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 4:
(verses out of sequence)

⁸And the four beasts

...had each of them six wings about *him*;

...and *they were* full of eyes within: and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.

SERAPHIM & CHERUBIM

1ST WITNESS

ISAIAH 6:
(verses out of sequence)

²...with twain he covered his face, and with twain he covered his feet, and with twain he did fly.

2ND WITNESS

EZEKIEL 1:

¹⁰As for the likeness of their faces, they four had the face of a man, and the face of a lion, on the right side: and they four had the face of an ox on the left side; they four also had the face of an eagle.

¹¹Thus *were* their faces: and their wings *were* stretched upward; two *wings* of every one *were* joined one to another, and two covered their bodies.

¹²And they went every one straight forward: whither the spirit was to go, they went; *and* they turned not when they went.

¹³As for the likeness of the living creatures, their appearance *was* like burning coals of fire, *and* like the appearance of lamps: it went up and down among the living creatures; and the fire was bright, and out of the fire went forth lightning.

¹⁴And the living creatures ran and returned as the appearance of a flash of lightning.

3RD WITNESS

EZEKIEL 10:
(verses out of sequence)

¹⁴And every one had four faces: the first face *was* the face of a cherub, and the second face *was* the face of a man, and the third the face of a lion, and the fourth the face of an eagle.

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 4:
(verses out of sequence)

⁷And the first beast *was* like a lion, and the second beast like a calf, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast *was* like a flying eagle.

⁴And round about the throne *were* four and twenty seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold.

⁵And out of the throne proceeded lightnings and thunderings and voices:..

SERAPHIM & CHERUBIM

1 ST WITNESS	2 ND WITNESS	3 RD WITNESS	4 TH WITNESS
<p>ISAIAH 6: <i>(verses out of sequence)</i></p>	<p>EZEKIEL 1:</p> <p>¹⁵Now as I <u>beheld</u> the living creatures, behold one wheel upon the earth by the <u>living creatures</u>, with his four faces.</p> <p>¹⁶The <u>appearance of the wheels and their work was like unto the colour of a beryl</u>:</p> <p>...and they four had one likeness: and their appearance and their work <u>was as it were a wheel in the middle of a wheel</u>.</p> <p>¹⁷When they went, they went upon their four sides: <u>and they turned not when they went</u>.</p> <p>¹⁸As for their rings, they were so high that they were dreadful; and their rings <u>were full of eyes</u> round about them four.</p> <p>¹⁹And when the living creatures went, the wheels went by them: and <u>when the living creatures were lifted up</u> from the earth, the wheels were lifted up.</p> <p>²⁰Whithersoever the spirit was to go, they went, thither <u>was their spirit to go</u>; and the wheels were lifted up over against them: for <u>the spirit of the living creature was in the wheels</u>.</p>	<p>EZEKIEL 10: <i>(verses out of sequence)</i></p> <p>⁹And when I <u>looked</u>, behold the four wheels by the <u>cherubims</u>, one wheel by one cherub,</p> <p>...and another wheel by another cherub: and the <u>appearance of the wheels was as the colour of a beryl stone</u>.</p> <p>¹⁰And as <i>for</i> their appearances, they four had one likeness, as if <u>a wheel had been in the midst of a wheel</u>.</p> <p>¹¹When they went, they went upon their four sides; <u>they turned not as they went</u>, but to the place whither the head looked they followed it; they turned not as they went.</p> <p>¹²And their whole body, and their backs, and their hands, and their wings, and the wheels, <u>were full of eyes</u> round about, <i>even</i> the wheels that they four had.</p> <p>¹³As for the wheels, it was cried unto them in my hearing, O wheel.</p> <p>¹⁶And when the cherubims went, the wheels went by them: and <u>when the cherubims lifted up</u> their wings to mount up from the earth, the same wheels also turned not from beside them.</p> <p>¹⁷When they stood, <i>these</i> stood; and when they were lifted up, <i>these</i> lifted up themselves <i>also</i>: for <u>the spirit of the living creature was in them</u>.</p>	<p>REVELATION 4: <i>(verses out of sequence)</i></p> <p>⁶And before the throne <i>there was</i> a sea of glass <u>like unto crystal</u>:</p> <p>...and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, <u>were four beasts full of eyes</u> before and behind.</p> <p>⁵...and <i>there were</i> seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the <u>seven Spirits of God</u>.</p>

SERAPHIM & CHERUBIM

1ST WITNESS

ISAIAH 6:
(verses out of sequence)

2ND WITNESS

EZEKIEL 1:

²¹When those went, *these* went; and when those stood, *these* stood; and when those were lifted up from the earth, the wheels were lifted up over against them:

...for the spirit of the living creatures was in the wheels.

²²And the likeness of the firmament upon the heads of the living creature was as the colour of the terrible crystal, stretched forth over their heads above.

²³And under the firmament *were* their wings straight, the one toward the other: every one had two, which covered on this side, and every one had two, which covered on that side, their bodies.

²⁴And when they went, I heard the noise of their wings, like the noise of great waters, as the voice of the Almighty, the voice of speech, as the noise of an host: when they stood, they let down their wings.

3RD WITNESS

EZEKIEL 10:
(verses out of sequence)

¹⁸Then the glory of the LORD departed from off the threshold of the house, and stood over the cherubims.

¹⁹And the cherubims lifted up their wings, and mounted up from the earth in my sight: when they went out, the wheels also were beside them, and *every one* stood at the door of the east gate of the LORD'S house; and the glory of the God of Israel *was* over them above.

²⁰This is the living creature that I saw under the God of Israel by the river of Chebar; and I knew that they were the cherubims.

⁵And the sound of the cherubims' wings was heard even to the outer court, as the voice of the Almighty God when he speaketh.

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 4:
(verses out of sequence)

¹After this I looked, and, behold, a door was opened in heaven:

...and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me; which said, Come up hither, and I will show thee things which must be hereafter.

SERAPHIM & CHERUBIM

1 ST WITNESS	2 ND WITNESS	3 RD WITNESS	4 TH WITNESS
<p>ISAIAH 6: <i>(verses out of sequence)</i></p>	<p>EZEKIEL 1:</p> <p>²⁵And there was <u>a voice from the firmament</u> that was over their heads, when they stood, <i>and</i> had let down their wings.</p> <p>²⁶And <u>above the firmament that was over their heads was the likeness of a throne, as the appearance of a sapphire stone:</u></p> <p>...and upon the <u>likeness of the throne</u> was the likeness as the appearance of <u>a man above upon it.</u></p> <p>²⁷And I saw as the <u>colour of amber</u>, as the <u>appearance of fire</u> round about within it, from the appearance of his loins even upward, and from the appearance of his loins even downward, I saw as it were the appearance of fire, and it had <u>brightness round about.</u></p>	<p>EZEKIEL 10: <i>(verses out of sequence)</i></p> <p>²And <u>he spake</u> unto the man clothed with linen, and said, Go in between the wheels, <i>even</i> under the cherub, and fill thine hand with <u>coals of fire</u> from between the cherubims, and scatter <u>them</u> over the city. And he went in in my sight.</p> <p>³Now the cherubims stood on the right side of the house, when the man went in; and the cloud filled the inner court.</p> <p>¹Then I looked, and, behold, <u>in the firmament that was above the head of the cherubims</u> there appeared over them <u>as it were a sapphire stone,</u></p> <p>...as the appearance of <u>the likeness of a throne.</u></p> <p>⁴Then <u>the glory of the LORD</u> went up from the cherub, <i>and stood</i> over the threshold of the house; and the house was filled with the cloud,</p> <p>...and the court was full of the <u>brightness of the LORD'S glory.</u></p>	<p>REVELATION 4: <i>(verses out of sequence)</i></p> <p>³And he that sat was to look upon <u>like a jasper and a sardine stone:</u></p> <p>...and <i>there was</i> a rainbow round about <u>the throne</u>, in sight like unto an emerald.</p> <p>²And immediately I was in the spirit: and, behold, a throne was set in heaven, and <u>one sat on the throne.</u></p> <p>⁹And when those beasts <u>give glory and honour</u> and thanks</p> <p>...to him that sat on <u>the throne</u>, who liveth for ever and ever,</p>
<p>¹In the year that king Uzziah died I saw also <u>the Lord sitting upon a throne</u>, high and lifted up, and his train filled the temple.</p>			

SERAPHIM & CHERUBIM

1ST WITNESS

ISAIAH 6:
(verses out of sequence)

⁴And the posts of the door moved at the voice of him that cried, and the house was filled with smoke.

⁵Then said I, Woe is me! for I am undone; because I *am* a man of unclean lips, and I dwell in the midst of a people of unclean lips: for mine eyes have seen the King, the LORD of hosts.

⁶Then flew one of the seraphims unto me, having a live coal in his hand, *which* he had taken with the tongs from off the altar:

⁷And he laid it upon my mouth, and said, Lo, this hath touched thy lips; and thine iniquity is taken away, and thy sin purged.

⁸Also I heard the voice of the Lord, saying, Whom shall I send, and who will go for us? Then said I, Here *am* I; send me.

2ND WITNESS

EZEKIEL 1:

²⁸As the appearance of the bow that is in the cloud in the day of rain, so was the appearance of the brightness round about. This *was* the appearance of the likeness of the glory of the LORD. And when I saw *it*, I fell upon my face, and I heard a voice of one that spake.

3RD WITNESS

EZEKIEL 10:
(verses out of sequence)

⁶And it came to pass, *that when he had commanded* the man clothed with linen, saying, Take fire from between the wheels, from between the cherubims; then he went in, and stood beside the wheels.

⁷And *one* cherub stretched forth his hand from between the cherubims

...unto the fire that was between the cherubims, and took *thereof*,

...and put it into the hands of him that was clothed with linen: who took *it*, and went out.

(The coals of fire represent God's judgment of Ezekiel 11 scattered over Jerusalem in order to prepare them for the removal of their heart of stone in order to place a heart of flesh into His people of Israel. This prepares them to be able to receive the Lord's glory.)

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 4:
(verses out of sequence)

¹⁰The four and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and

...cast their crowns before the throne, saying,

¹¹Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.

CHAPTER 29

EZEKIEL 10 & JOHN 10

This chapter highlights another one of those reverse pattern comparisons and this time the right column from the book of John is in reverse order chronologically as it compares with Ezekiel. The subject matter between the two columns match, in keeping with the theory of Bible numerics where similarly numbered chapters / books have similar subject matter. For example: Ezekiel 10 and John 10, or Exodus 15 and Revelation 15, etc.

In this chapter there are interesting comparisons between coals of fire and the words of Jesus. There is also an amazing comparison of how the cherubim are symbolic of the attributes of Jesus. This is covered in more detail in the next chapter titled "Four Door".

When one first reads about the wheels in the book of Ezekiel it can be confusing as to exactly what is the spiritual significance of these wheels. In using a comparison with a matching Bible chapter, it becomes clear that the wheel is symbolic of being a follower of Jesus. It turns not to the left, nor to the right, because it follows His voice. The wheel is symbolic of the sheep and the cherubim are symbolic of the shepherd.

EZEKIEL 10 & JOHN 10

1ST WITNESS

EZEKIEL 10:

¹Then I looked, and, behold, in the firmament that was above the head of the cherubims

...there appeared over them as it were a sapphire stone (*rich purplish blue*), as the appearance of the likeness of a throne.

²And he spake unto the man clothed with linen, and said,

...Go in between the wheels, *even* under the cherub,

...and fill thine hand with coals of fire from between the cherubims,

...and scatter them over the city*. And he went in in my sight.

(* *The words of Jesus are coals of fire scattered over the people.*)

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 10:

⁴²And many believed on him there.

⁴¹And many resorted unto him, and said, John did no miracle: but all things that John spake of this man were true.

⁴⁰And went away again beyond Jordan into the place where John at first baptized (*at a river; Jordan?*);

...and there he abode.

³⁹Therefore they sought again to take him: but he escaped out of their hand,

³⁸But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in me, and I in him.

³⁷If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not.

³⁶Say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God?

³⁵If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken;

³⁴Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods?

³³The Jews answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy; and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God.

³²Jesus answered them, Many good works have I showed you from my Father; for which of those works, do ye stone me?

³¹Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him.

³⁰I and my Father are one*.

²⁹My Father, which gave *them* me, is greater than all; and no *man* is able to pluck *them* out of my Father's hand.

²⁸And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any *man* pluck them out of my hand.

²⁷My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:

²⁶But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.

²⁵Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me.

²⁴Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly.

EZEKIEL 10 & JOHN 10

1ST WITNESS

EZEKIEL 10:

³Now the cherubims stood on the right side of the house, when the man went in; and the cloud filled the inner court.

⁴Then the glory of the LORD went up from the cherub, and stood over the threshold of the house; and the house was filled with the cloud, and the court was full of the brightness of the LORD'S glory.

⁵And the sound of the cherubims' wings was heard even to the outer court, as the voice of the Almighty God when he speaketh.

⁶And it came to pass, that when he had commanded the man clothed with linen, saying, Take fire from between the wheels, from between the cherubims; then he went in, and stood beside the wheels.

⁷And one cherub stretched forth his hand from between the cherubims unto the fire that was between the cherubims, and took thereof, and put it into the hands of him that was clothed with linen: who took it, and went out.

⁸And there appeared in the cherubims the form of a man's hand under their wings.

⁹And when I looked, behold the four wheels by the cherubims, one wheel by one cherub, and another wheel by another cherub: and the appearance of the wheels was as the colour of a beryl stone. (*green – bluish green – yellow – pink – white*)

¹⁰And as for their appearances, they four had one likeness, as if a wheel had been in the midst of a wheel.

(The cherubim are symbolic of Jesus.)

¹¹When they went, they went upon their four sides; they turned not as they went, but to the place whither the head looked they followed it; they turned not as they went.

¹²And their whole body, and their backs, and their hands, and their wings, and the wheels, were full of eyes round about, even the wheels that they four had.

¹³As for the wheels, it was cried unto them in my hearing, O wheel.

(The wheel is symbolic of the follower of Jesus. It turns not to the left, nor to the right, because it follows His voice.)

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 10:

²³And Jesus walked in the temple in Solomon's porch.

²²And it was at Jerusalem the feast of the dedication, and it was winter.

(Threshold = Door)

²¹Others said, These are not the words of him that hath a devil.

...Can a devil open the eyes of the blind?

²⁰And many of them said, He hath a devil, and is mad; why hear ye him?

(To attribute the works of God to the devil is to reap the consequence of God's fire.)

¹⁹There was a division therefore again among the Jews for these sayings.

(Unity in God's kingdom. Division in the devil's kingdom.)

¹⁸No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father.

¹⁷Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it again.

¹⁶And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd.

¹⁵As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep.

¹⁴I am the good shepherd,

...and know my sheep, and am known of mine.

EZEKIEL 10 & JOHN 10

1ST WITNESS

EZEKIEL 10:

¹⁴And every one had four faces: the first face was the face of a cherub, and the second face was the face of a man, and the third the face of a lion, and the fourth the face of an eagle.

(Contrasting the character of Jesus with the character of the devil's hireling servants.)

¹⁵And the cherubims were lifted up. This is the living creature that I saw by the river of Chebar.

(Strong's 3529: long ago, river of Mesopotamia)

(Ezek. 1:1 – "among the captives by the river of Chebar")

¹⁶And when the cherubims went, the wheels went by them: and when the cherubims lifted up their wings to mount up from the earth,

...the same wheels also turned not from beside them.

¹⁷When they stood, these stood; and when they were lifted up, these lifted up themselves also:

...for the spirit of the living creature was in them.

¹⁸Then the glory of the LORD departed from off the threshold of the house, and stood over the cherubims.

¹⁹And the cherubims lifted up their wings, and mounted up from the earth in my sight: when they went out, the wheels also were beside them, and every one stood at the door of the east gate of the LORD'S house; and the glory of the God of Israel was over them above.

²⁰This is the living creature that I saw under the God of Israel by the river of Chebar; and I knew that they were the cherubims.

²¹Every one had four faces apiece, and every one four wings; and the likeness of the hands of a man was under their wings.

²²And the likeness of their faces was the same faces which I saw by the river of Chebar, their appearances and themselves: they went every one straight forward.

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 10:

¹³The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep.

¹²But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.

¹¹I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep.

¹⁰The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have *it* more abundantly.

⁹I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture.

⁸All that ever came before me are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them.

⁷Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep.

⁶This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.

⁵And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers.

⁴And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice.

³To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out.

²But he that entereth in by the door is the shepherd of the sheep.

¹Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber.

CHAPTER 30

FOUR DOOR

Psalm 119:25-32 are the verses for “Daleth” which is the 4th letter of the Hebrew alphabet and it means “door”. These verses are compared with John (4th book of the New Testament) and with Revelation Chapter 4. The resulting pattern in the next 22 pages is very powerful because 4 is a very important number. There are two major sections from the pattern that blossom forth.

The first section has to do with the resurrection scriptures (Psalm 119:25-27, Revelation 4:1-4) and the test of faith that takes place for the following groups of people from the book of John:

- 1.) The Jews of the temple in Jerusalem
- 2.) The disciples before the resurrection of Lazarus
- 3.) Martha at the resurrection of Lazarus
- 4.) Mary at the resurrection of Lazarus
- 5.) The council of the chief priests and Pharisees
- 6.) Supper with Jesus, Lazarus, & Mary, where Judas comments about the ointment of spikenard
- 7.) People rejoicing at Jesus’ triumphal entry into Jerusalem with the Pharisees complaining
- 8.) The Greeks at the feast with Philip and Andrew

In each of the eight “episodes” above, it begins with either someone in unbelief, someone is dead, or someone is thirsty for spiritual water (wants to see Jesus). Their soul “cleaveth unto the dust” of unbelief until Jesus arrives to resurrect them or to quench their thirst.

In many of the episodes, even after Jesus arrives there is still unbelief spoken or demonstrated... “I have declared my ways”. This illustrates the level of immaturity that God’s people have initially as they grow in the Lord. However, the Lord expects us to mature and that maturity will be tested as demonstrated in the book of Acts.

The scriptures that match up with Revelation 4:2-4 tell us that if we will walk in a higher level of faith, we will be closer to witnessing the glory of God. Words and actions of unbelief separate people from the glory. That’s why Moses had to put a boundary around the foot of God’s holy mountain Sinai or the people in unbelief would have been consumed (Exodus 19:12).

The second section of the pattern concerns the revelation of the attributes of Jesus by symbolic comparison to the **four** beasts: the lion, the calf, the man, and the flying eagle. It shows how Jesus was operating in the maturity of these attributes while the disciples were operating immaturely. Eventually the disciples would walk in maturity, even to the point of martyrdom. Study the attributes of this pattern closely. The revelation of it is surprising.

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

PSALM 119: DALETH

(DALETH = 4 = Door)

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 10: (JOHN = 4TH Book of N.T.)

¹Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber.

²But he that entereth in by the door is the shepherd of the sheep.

³To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out.

⁴And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice.

⁵And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers.

⁶This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.

⁷Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep.

⁸All that ever came before me are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them.

⁹I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture.

¹⁰The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have *it* more abundantly.

¹¹I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep.

¹²But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.

¹³The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep.

¹⁴I am the good shepherd, and know my *sheep*, and am known of mine.

¹⁵As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep.

¹⁶And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, *and* one shepherd.

¹⁷Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it again.

¹⁸No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 4:

¹After this I looked, and, behold, a door was opened in heaven:

(4TH Book of Revelation)

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

PSALM 119:

²⁵My soul cleaveth unto the dust:

...quicken thou me according to thy word.

²⁶I have declared my ways, and thou heardest me:

...teach me thy statutes.

²⁷Make me to understand the way of thy precepts:

...so shall I talk of thy wondrous works.

JOHN 10:

¹⁹There was a division therefore again among the Jews for these sayings.

²⁰And many of them said, He hath a devil, and is mad; why hear ye him?

²¹Others said, These are not the words of him that hath a devil. Can a devil open the eyes of the blind?

²²And it was at Jerusalem the feast of the dedication, and it was winter.

²³And Jesus walked in the temple in Solomon's porch.

²⁴Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him,

...How long dost thou make us to doubt?

If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly.

²⁵Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me.

²⁶But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.

²⁷My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:

²⁸And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.

²⁹My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand.

³⁰I and my Father are one.

³¹Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him.

³²Jesus answered them, Many good works have I showed you from my Father; for which of those works do ye stone me?

³³The Jews answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy; and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God.

(Words of unbelief are symbolized by dust and dirt.)

REVELATION 4:

¹...and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me; which said, Come up hither,

(Our ways are declarations of unbelief.)

(Without God's revelation we shall not see the eternal.)

...and I will show thee things which must be hereafter.

²And immediately I was in the spirit: and, behold, a throne was set in heaven,

...and one sat on the throne.

³And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and there was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald.

⁴And round about the throne were four and twenty seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold.

(They blaspheme God by accusing Him of not being the great I AM.)

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

PSALM 119:

²⁵My soul cleaveth unto the dust:

...quicken thou me according to thy word.

²⁶I have declared my ways, and thou heardest me:

...teach me thy statutes.

²⁷Make me to understand the way of thy precepts:

...so shall I talk of thy wondrous works.

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 11:

¹¹These things said he: and after that he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth;

...but I go, that I may awake him out of sleep.

¹²Then said his disciples,

...Lord, if he sleep, he shall do well.

¹³Howbeit Jesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of taking of rest in sleep.

¹⁴Then said Jesus unto them plainly,

Lazarus is dead.

¹⁵And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, to the intent ye may believe; nevertheless let us go unto him.

¹⁶Then said Thomas, which is called Didymus, unto his fellowdisciples, Let us also go, that we may die with him.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 4:

¹...and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me; which said, Come up hither,

(The pattern of unbelief continues...)

(...and immaturity.)

...and I will show thee things which must be hereafter.

²And immediately I was in the spirit: and, behold, a throne was set in heaven, and *one* sat on the throne.

³And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and *there was* a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald.

⁴And round about the throne *were* four and twenty seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold.

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

PSALM 119:

²⁵My soul cleaveth unto the dust:

("Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live." John 5:25)

...quicken thou me according to thy word.

²⁶I have declared my ways, and thou heardest me:

...teach me thy statutes.

²⁷Make me to understand the way of thy precepts:

...so shall I talk of thy wondrous works.

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 11:

¹⁷Then when Jesus came, he found that he had *lain* in the grave four days already.

¹⁸Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off:

¹⁹And many of the Jews came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.

²⁰Then Martha, as soon as she heard that Jesus was coming,

...went and met him: but Mary sat *still* in the house.

²¹Then said Martha unto Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.

²²But I know, that even now, whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give *it* thee.

²³Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again.

²⁴Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day.

²⁵Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live:

²⁶And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this?

²⁷She saith unto him, Yea, Lord: I believe that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world.

3RD WITNESS

(Unbelief is a visible sign.)

REVELATION 4:

¹...and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me;

...which said, Come up hither,

(Faith is not visible but the promised results are visible.)

...and I will show thee things which must be hereafter.

²And immediately I was in the spirit: and, behold, a throne was set in heaven, and *one* sat on the throne.

³And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and *there was* a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald.

⁴And round about the throne *were* four and twenty seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold.

(A positive confession of faith.)

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

PSALM 119:

²⁵My soul cleaveth unto the dust:

...quicken thou me according to thy word.

²⁶I have declared my ways, and thou heardest me:

JOHN 11:

²⁸And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is come, and calleth for thee.

²⁹As soon as she heard that,

...she arose quickly, and came unto him.

³⁰Now Jesus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place where Martha met him.

³¹The Jews then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary, that she rose up hastily and went out, followed her, saying, She goeth unto the grave to weep there.

³²Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.

³³When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled,

³⁴And said, **Where have ye laid him?** They said unto him, Lord, come and see.

³⁵Jesus wept.

³⁶Then said the Jews, Behold how he loved him!

³⁷And some of them said, Could not this man, which opened the eyes of the blind, have caused that even this man should not have died?

³⁸Jesus therefore again groaning in himself cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it.

³⁹Jesus said, **Take ye away the stone.** Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been dead four days.

(Unbelief attacks Mary's soul.)

REVELATION 4:

¹...and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me;

...which said, Come up hither,

(Do we put God in a box where we expect Him to meet our deadlines?)

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

PSALM 119:

²⁶...teach me thy statutes.

²⁷Make me to understand
the way of thy precepts:

...so shall I talk of thy
wondrous works.

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 11:

⁴⁰Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee,
that, if thou wouldst believe,

...thou shouldst see the glory of God?

⁴¹Then they took away the stone *from the
place* where the dead was laid. And Jesus
lifted up *his* eyes, and said, Father, I thank
thee that thou hast heard me.

⁴²And I knew that thou hearest me always: but
because of the people which stand by I said it,
that they may believe that thou hast sent me.

⁴³And when he thus had spoken, he cried with
a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.

⁴⁴And he that was dead came forth, bound
hand and foot with graveclothes: and his face
was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith
unto them, Loose him, and let him go.

⁴⁵Then many of the Jews which came to Mary,
and had seen the things which Jesus did,
believed on him.

⁴⁶But some of them went their ways to the
Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus
had done.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 4:

¹...and I will show thee things
which must be hereafter.

²And immediately I was in the
spirit: and, behold, a throne was
set in heaven, and
...one sat on the throne.

³And he that sat was to look
upon like a jasper and a sardine
stone: and *there was* a rainbow
round about the throne, in sight
like unto an emerald.

⁴And round about the throne
were four and twenty seats: and
upon the seats I saw four and
twenty elders sitting, clothed in
white raiment; and they had on
their heads crowns of gold.

*(The reward of faith is the glory of
God and the glory is His.)*

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

JOHN 11:

⁴⁷Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles.

⁴⁸If we let him thus alone, all *men* will believe on him: and the Romans shall come and take away both our place and nation.

⁴⁹And one of them, *named* Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all,

⁵⁰Nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.

⁵¹And this spake he not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation;

⁵²And not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one the children of God that were scattered abroad.

⁵³Then from that day forth they took counsel together for to put him to death.

⁵⁴Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews; but went thence unto a country near to the wilderness, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.

⁵⁵And the Jews' passover was nigh at hand: and many went out of the country up to Jerusalem before the passover, to purify themselves.

⁵⁶Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple, What think ye, that he will not come to the feast?

⁵⁷Now both the chief priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that, if any man knew where he were, he should show it, that they might take him.

PSALM 119:

²⁵My soul cleaveth unto the dust:

...quicken thou me according to thy word.

²⁶I have declared my ways, and thou heardest me:

REVELATION 4:

¹...and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me; which said, Come up hither,

(The demonic spirit of religion comes against the Holy Spirit.)

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

PSALM 119:

²⁶...teach me thy statutes.

²⁷Make me to understand
the way of thy precepts:

...so shall I talk of thy
wondrous works.

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 12:

³⁷But though he had done so many miracles
before them, yet they believed not on him:

³⁸That the saying of Esaias the prophet might
be fulfilled, which he spake, Lord, who hath
believed our report? and to whom hath the
arm of the Lord been revealed?

³⁹Therefore they could not believe, because
that Esaias said again,

⁴⁰He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened
their heart; that they should not see with their
eyes, nor understand with their heart, and be
converted, and I should heal them.

⁴¹These things said Esaias, when he saw his
glory, and spake of him.

⁴²Nevertheless among the chief rulers also
many believed on him; but because of the
Pharisees they did not confess him, lest they
should be put out of the synagogue:

⁴³For they loved the praise of men more than
the praise of God.

3RD WITNESS

(The point of no return is...)

*(...when God himself closes the
door on someone.)*

REVELATION 4:

¹...and I will show thee things
which must be hereafter.

²And immediately I was in the
spirit: and, behold, a throne was
set in heaven, and *one* sat on
the throne.

³And he that sat was to look
upon like a jasper and a sardine
stone: and *there was* a rainbow
round about the throne, in sight
like unto an emerald.

⁴And round about the throne
were four and twenty seats: and
upon the seats I saw four and
twenty elders sitting, clothed in
white raiment; and they had on
their heads crowns of gold.

*(If we deny Jesus before men, He
will deny us before the Father.)*

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

PSALM 119:

²⁵My soul cleaveth unto the dust:

...quicken thou me according to thy word.

²⁶I have declared my ways, and thou heardest me:

...teach me thy statutes.

²⁷Make me to understand the way of thy precepts:

...so shall I talk of thy wondrous works.

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 12:

¹Then Jesus six days before the passover came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead,

...whom he raised from the dead.

²There they made him a supper; and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him.

³Then took Mary a pound of ointment of spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.

⁴Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, which should betray him,

⁵Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?

⁶This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein.

⁷Then said Jesus,

...Let her alone: against the day of my burying hath she kept this.

⁸For the poor always ye have with you; but me ye have not always.

⁹Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: and they came not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.

¹⁰But the chief priests consulted that they might put Lazarus also to death;

¹¹Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

(Belief brings with it the reward of beholding the glory of God.)

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 4:

¹...and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me; which said, Come up hither,

(Words of an adversary.)

...and I will show thee things which must be hereafter.

²And immediately I was in the spirit: and, behold, a throne was set in heaven, and *one* sat on the throne.

³And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and *there* was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald.

⁴And round about the throne *were* four and twenty seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold.

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

PSALM 119:

²⁵My soul cleaveth unto the dust:

...quicken thou me according to thy word.

²⁶I have declared my ways, and thou heardest me:

...teach me thy statutes.

²⁷Make me to understand the way of thy precepts:

...so shall I talk of thy wondrous works.

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 12:

¹²On the next day much people that were come to the feast,

...when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem,

¹³Took branches of palm trees, and went forth to meet him,

...and cried, Hosanna: Blessed is the King of Israel that cometh in the name of the Lord.

¹⁴And Jesus, when he had found a young ass, sat thereon; as it is written,

¹⁵Fear not, daughter of Sion: behold, thy King cometh, sitting on an ass's colt.

¹⁶These things understood not his disciples at the first:

but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and *that* they had done these things unto him.

¹⁷The people therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record.

¹⁸For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

¹⁹The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? behold, the world is gone after him.

3RD WITNESS

(Souls with a spiritual thirst.)

REVELATION 4:

¹...and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me;

...which said, Come up hither,

(A higher level confession of faith.)

...and I will show thee things which must be hereafter.

²And immediately I was in the spirit: and, behold, a throne was set in heaven, and *one* sat on the throne.

³And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and *there was* a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald.

⁴And round about the throne *were* four and twenty seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold.

(The spirit of religion operates with a god of self.)

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

PSALM 119:

²⁵My soul cleaveth unto the dust:

...quicken thou me according to thy word.

²⁶I have declared my ways, and thou heardest me:

...teach me thy statutes.

²⁷Make me to understand the way of thy precepts:

...so shall I talk of thy wondrous works.

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 12:

²⁰And there were certain Greeks among them

...that came up to worship at the feast:

²¹The same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus.

²²Philip cometh and telleth Andrew: and again Andrew and Philip tell Jesus.

²³And Jesus answered them,

...saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified.

²⁴Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.

²⁵He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal.

²⁶If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will my Father honour.

²⁷Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 4:

¹...and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me; which said, Come up hither,

...and I will show thee things which must be hereafter.

²And immediately I was in the spirit: and, behold, a throne was set in heaven, and *one* sat on the throne.

³And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and *there was* a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald.

⁴And round about the throne *were* four and twenty seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold.

(What looks like a physical defeat is a spiritual victory.)

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

JOHN 12:

²⁸Father, glorify thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven,

...saying, I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again.

²⁹The people therefore, that stood by, and heard it, said that it thundered: others said, An angel spake to him.

³⁰Jesus answered and said, This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes.

³¹Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out.

³²And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me.

³³This he said, signifying what death he should die.

³⁴The people answered him, We have heard out of the law that Christ abideth for ever: and how sayest thou, The Son of man must be lifted up? who is this Son of man?

³⁵Then Jesus said unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you. Walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you: for he that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth.

³⁶While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light. These things spake Jesus, and departed, and did hide himself from them.

⁴⁴Jesus cried and said, He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me.

⁴⁵And he that seeth me seeth him that sent me.

⁴⁶I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me should not abide in darkness.

REVELATION 4:

⁵And out of the throne

...proceeded lightnings

...and thunderings

...and voices:

(“...my heart is like wax; it is melted in the midst of my bowels.”
Psalm 22:14)

...and there were seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven Spirits of God.

PSALM 119:

²⁸My soul melteth for heaviness:

...strengthen thou me according unto thy word.

(“Thy word is a lamp unto my feet...” Psalm 119:105a)

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

PSALM 119:

²⁹Remove from me the way
of lying:

JOHN 13:

¹Now before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.

²And supper being ended, the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's *son*, to betray him;

³Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God;

⁴He riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments; and took a towel, and girded himself.

⁵After that he poureth water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe *them* with the towel wherewith he was girded.

⁶Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and Peter saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet?

⁷Jesus answered and said unto him, **What I do thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter.**

⁸Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, **If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me.**

⁹Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also *my hands and my head*.

¹⁰Jesus saith to him, **He that is washed needeth not save to wash *his* feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all.**

¹¹For he knew who should betray him; therefore said he, **Ye are not all clean.**

¹²So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto them, **Know ye what I have done to you?**

¹³**Ye call me Master and Lord: and ye say well; for so I am.**

¹⁴**If I then, *your* Lord and Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet.**

¹⁵**For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you.**

¹⁶**Verily, verily, I say unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord; neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him.**

¹⁷**If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them.**

REVELATION 4:

⁶And before the throne *there* was a sea of glass like unto crystal: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, *were* four beasts full of eyes before and behind.
(*Lies cannot hide from these eyes.*)

←

←

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

JOHN 13:

¹⁸I speak not of you all: I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel against me.

←

¹⁹Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am *he*.

²⁰Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.

²¹When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.

²²Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.

²³Now there was leaning on Jesus' bosom one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved.

²⁴Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake.

²⁵He then lying on Jesus' breast saith unto him, Lord, who is it?

²⁶Jesus answered, He it is, to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped it. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave *it* to Judas Iscariot, *the son* of Simon.

REVELATION 4:

⁶And before the throne *there* was a sea of glass like unto crystal: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, *were* four beasts full of eyes before and behind. (*Lies cannot hide from these eyes.*)

←

PSALM 119:

²⁹Remove from me the way of lying:

²⁷And after the sop Satan entered into him.

Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest, do quickly.

²⁸Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto him.

²⁹For some *of them* thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy *those things* that we have need of against the feast; or, that he should give something to the poor.

→ ³⁰He then having received the sop went immediately out: and it was night.

³¹Therefore, when he was gone out, Jesus said, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him.

³²If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorify him in himself, and shall straightway glorify him.

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

PSALM 119:
²⁹ ...and grant me thy law
graciously.

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 16:
²³ And in that day ye shall ask me nothing.
Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give *it* you.
²⁴ Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.
²⁵ These things have I spoken unto you in proverbs: but the time cometh, when I shall no more speak unto you in proverbs, but I shall show you plainly of the Father.
²⁶ At that day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you:
²⁷ For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God.
²⁸ I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father.
²⁹ His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no proverb.

³⁰ Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we believe that thou camest forth from God.
³¹ Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe?
³² Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me.

³³ These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 4:
⁷ And the first beast was like a lion,

(Be bold as a lion and ask.)

(The disciples are not like lions yet.)

(Jesus is like a lion.)

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

PSALM 119:

³⁰I have chosen the way of truth: thy judgments have I laid *before me*.

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 16:

⁷Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you.

⁸And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment:

⁹Of sin, because they believe not on me;

¹⁰Of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more;

¹¹Of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged.

¹²I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.

¹³Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, *that* shall he speak: and he will show you things to come.

¹⁴He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall show *it* unto you.

¹⁵All things that the Father hath are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall show *it* unto you.

¹⁶A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father.

¹⁷Then said *some* of his disciples among themselves, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me: and, Because I go to the Father?

¹⁸They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we cannot tell what he saith.

¹⁹Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them, Do ye inquire among yourselves of that I said, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me?

²⁰Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy.

²¹A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world.

²²And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 4:

⁷...and the second beast like a calf,

(The disciples are not like a calf yet.)

(The disciples travail when Jesus dies on the cross.)

(Birthed like a calf.)

(Joy at the resurrection of Jesus.)

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

JOHN 15:

¹ I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.

² Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every *branch* that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.

³ Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you.

⁴ Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

⁵ I am the vine, ye *are* the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.

⁶ If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

⁷ If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.

⁸ Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples.

⁹ As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love.

¹⁰ If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love.

¹¹ These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and *that* your joy might be full.

¹² This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you.

REVELATION 4:

⁷ ...and the second beast like a calf,

(To bear is to bring forth.)

(The disciples are learning to bring forth...)

(...like a calf is brought forth.)

(“Abide in” is to be pregnant with the Word of God and to bring forth the fruit of the Holy Spirit, ref. Galatians 5:22-23.)

PSALM 119:

³⁰ I have chosen the way of truth: thy judgments have I laid *before me.*

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

PSALM 119:

³⁰I have chosen the way of truth: thy judgments have I laid *before me*.

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 14:

¹⁶And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;

¹⁷Even the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

¹⁸I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you.

¹⁹Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also.

²⁰At that day ye shall know that I *am* in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you.

²¹He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him.

²²Judas saith unto him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the world?

²³Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him.

²⁴He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me.

²⁵These things have I spoken unto you, being yet present with you.

²⁶But the Comforter, *which is* the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

²⁷Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 4:

⁷...and the second beast like a calf,

(“And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God.” Luke 1:35)

(Be impregnated by the seed of the Word so the calf can be born.)

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

PSALM 119:
³¹I have stuck unto
thy testimonies; O LORD,
put me not to shame.

(way = door)

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 14:
¹Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me.
²In my Father's house are many mansions: if *it* were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you.
³And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, *there* ye may be also.
⁴And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.
⁵Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way?
⁶Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.

⁷If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.
⁸Philip saith unto him, Lord, show us the Father, and it sufficeth us.

⁹Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou *then*, Show us the Father?

¹⁰Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works.
¹¹Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake.
¹²Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater *works* than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father.
¹³And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son.
¹⁴If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do *it*.
¹⁵If ye love me, keep my commandments.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 4:
⁷...and the third beast had a face as a man,

(Philip cannot see yet spiritually.)

(The Father with the physical face of a man by virtue of His Son Jesus. Philip is able to behold the face of Jesus with his physical eyes but the Father is a Spirit, ref. John 4:24.)

(Have faith. Physical eyes cannot see the spirit world of the throne room.)

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

PSALM 119:
³²I will run the way of
thy commandments,

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 13:

³³Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me: and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; so now I say to you.

³⁴A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another.

³⁵By this shall all *men* know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

³⁶Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered him, Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now; but thou shalt follow me afterwards.

³⁷Peter said unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thy sake.

³⁸Jesus answered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake? Verily, verily, I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 4:

⁷...and the fourth beast was like a flying eagle.

(Jesus is going to fly like an eagle; first with His arms outstretched on the cross, then by the resurrection.)

(Peter is not an eagle yet but he is still a chicken. He will eventually be crucified for his faith in Jesus, ref. John 21:18.)

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

PSALM 119:

³²...when thou shalt enlarge my heart.

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 17:

¹These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven,

...and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee:

²As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him.

³And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent.

⁴I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do.

⁵And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

⁶I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word.

⁷Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee.

⁸For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received *them*, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me.

⁹I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine.

¹⁰And all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them.

¹¹And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we *are*.

¹²While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 4:

⁸And the four beasts had each of them six wings about *him*; and *they were full of eyes* within:

...and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.

FOUR DOOR

1ST WITNESS

PSALM 119:

(“...in thy presence is fulness of joy ...” Psalm 16:11) →

2ND WITNESS

JOHN 17:

¹³And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves.

¹⁴I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

¹⁵I pray not that thou shouldst take them out of the world, but that thou shouldst keep them from the evil.

¹⁶They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

¹⁷Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.

¹⁸As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world.

¹⁹And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.

²⁰Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word;

²¹That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.

²²And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one:

²³I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.

²⁴Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; ...that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world.

²⁵O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me.

²⁶And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 4:

⁹And when those beasts give glory and honour and thanks to him that sat on the throne, who liveth for ever and ever,

¹⁰The four and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying,

¹¹Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.

CHAPTER 31

THE RESURRECTIONS

A fundamental belief of Christianity is that Jesus is risen from the dead and without His resurrection there is no Christian faith (1 Cor. 15:12-14). Believers in Jesus are made in the image of God and those who have passed away will also be risen from the dead (1 Cor. 15:51-57). In order for there to be a resurrection, the person must be physically dead first, otherwise there is no need.

There are two resurrections that will take place for all of humanity: the resurrection of the just (saved people) and the resurrection of the unjust (unsaved people). (see also John 5:29)

“And have hope toward God, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust.” Acts 24:15

The resurrection of the just is the 1st resurrection and the resurrection of the unjust is the 2nd resurrection and they occur in that order (Rev. 20:4-6).

Contained in 1 Corinthians 15 and 1 Thessalonians 4 are some of the more well-known verses concerning the resurrection of the just:

“So also *is* the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body...” 1 Corinthians 15:42-44

“Behold, I show you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal *must* put on immortality. So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where *is* thy sting? O grave, where *is* thy victory? The sting of death *is* sin; and the strength of sin *is* the law. But thanks *be* to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.” 1 Corinthians 15:51-57

“But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope. For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with him. For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive *and* remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not prevent them which are asleep. For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: Then we which are alive *and* remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. Wherefore comfort one another with these words.” 1 Thess. 4:13-18

In Revelation 20, the second resurrection takes place for the unjust and it occurs at the end of Christ's thousand-year reign on the earth. The unjust are resurrected for purposes of their final judgment at the Great White Throne.

“And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is *the book of life*: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and

CHAPTER 31

THE RESURRECTIONS

hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.”
Revelation 20:11-15

So, believers in Jesus have a future resurrection of the just to look forward to. However, there has already been a resurrection of the just. When Jesus rose from the dead He became immortal and the saints who had passed away also rose from the dead immortal and ascended with Him to heaven, on the Feast of Firstfruits in the springtime.

“And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose, And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.”
Matthew 27:52-53

“But now is Christ risen from the dead, *and* become the firstfruits of them that slept.”
1 Corinthians 15:20

Very few people know that the resurrection of the just comes in three parts (per Al Neal research):

“For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. But every man in his own order:
Christ the firstfruits; (*Part 1: Old Testament saints*)
afterward they that are Christ’s at his coming. (*Part 2: New Testament saints*)
Then *cometh* the end, (*Part 3: tribulation saints*)
...when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet. The last enemy *that* shall be destroyed *is* death.”
1 Corinthians 15:22-26

The timeline sequence of the three parts is as follows:

Part 1 took place 2000 years ago when Jesus arose from the grave (Matt. 27:52-53).

Part 2 will take place just prior to the 3½ year Great Tribulation (Rev. 4:1, Rev. 12:5). (see also Rev. 7:3-4 and Rev. 14:1)

Part 3 will take place at the end of the Great Tribulation and will also have the remaining believers who are still alive caught up with the Lord (1 Thess. 4:16-17, Rev. 10:7, Rev. 11:15, Rev. 16:15-17).

The following pages contain the Bible pattern which reveals the above conclusions.

In addition to underlined words in the following pages, there are key words that are highlighted in blue: [voice / trumpet](#), [earthquake](#), and [resurrection / come up hither](#). This makes it easier to follow the main pattern in the midst of the details.

There are also some very curious verses in the Bible pattern for further study:

Prior to Part 2 of the resurrection of the just, the Lord speaks and the people of the world go backward, fall down, or go down (John 18:6, Matt. 24:2, Prov. 25:7).

Prior to Part 3 of the resurrection of the just, angels are coming down from the heavens, both good and bad angels (Matt. 28:2, Rev. 6:13, Rev. 10:1). (see also Rev. 9:1)

THE RESURRECTIONS

1ST WITNESS

(In sequential order.)

JOHN 18:

⁴Jesus therefore, knowing all things that should come upon him, went forth, and said unto them, **Whom seek ye?**

⁵They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, **I am he.** And Judas also, which betrayed him, stood with them.

⁶As soon then as he had said unto them, I am he, they went backward, and fell to the ground.

¹²Then the band (including Judas) and the captain and officers of the Jews took Jesus, and bound him,

JOHN 19:

¹⁷And he bearing his cross went forth into a place called *the place* of a skull, which is called in the Hebrew Golgotha:

¹⁸Where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst.

MARK 15:

³³And when the sixth hour was come, there was darkness (*no light or spiritual light*) over the whole land until the ninth hour.

³⁴And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, **Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?** which is, being interpreted, **My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?**

³⁵And some of them that stood by, when they heard *it*, said, Behold, he calleth Elias.

2ND WITNESS

(In sequential order.)

REVELATION 6:

¹And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals, and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of the four beasts saying, Come and see.

MATTHEW 24:

²...**There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.**

REVELATION 6:

²And I saw, and behold a white horse (*spirit of antichrist*): and he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given unto him: and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.

³And when he had opened the second seal, I heard the second beast say, Come and see.

⁴And there went out another horse *that was red* (*wars and rumors of wars*): and *power* was given to him that sat thereon to take peace from the earth,

and that they should kill one another (*nation against nation, kingdom against kingdom*): and there was given unto him a great sword.

REVELATION 6:

⁵And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third beast say, Come and see. And I beheld, and lo a black horse (*famine of food and famine of the Word*); and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand.

⁶And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say, A measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny;

3RD WITNESS

(In sequential order.)

PROVERBS 25:

⁶Put not forth thyself in the presence of the king, and stand not in the place of great *men*:

⁷For better *it is* that it be said unto thee,

...**Come up hither**; than that thou shouldest be put lower in the presence of the prince whom thine eyes have seen.

THE RESURRECTIONS

1ST WITNESS

JOHN 19:

²⁸After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, **I thirst.**

²⁹Now there was set a vessel full of vinegar: and they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put *it* upon hyssop, and put *it* to his mouth.

³⁰When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, **It is finished:** and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.

MATTHEW 27:

⁵⁰Jesus, when he had cried again

...with a loud voice, yielded up the ghost.

⁵¹And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom;

...and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent;

⁵⁴Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God.

2ND WITNESS

REVELATION 6:

⁶...and see thou hurt not the oil and the wine.

⁷And when he had opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth beast say, Come and see.

⁸And I looked, and behold a pale horse (*pestilences*): and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

MATTHEW 24:

⁹And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held:

¹⁰And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

¹¹And white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season,

(The 144,000 are caught away.)

¹⁴**And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.**

(Judgment upon the USA.)

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 1:

¹⁸**I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.**

REVELATION 4:

¹After this I looked, and, behold, a door was opened in heaven:

...and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me;

...which said, Come up hither, and I will show thee things which must be hereafter.

(Part 2 of the resurrection of the just.)

THE RESURRECTIONS

1ST WITNESS

MARK 15:

⁴²And now when the even was come, because it was the preparation, that is, the day before the sabbath,

⁴³Joseph of Arimathaea, an honourable counsellor, which also waited for the kingdom of God, came, and went in boldly unto Pilate, and craved the body of Jesus.

⁴⁴And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead: and calling *unto him* the centurion, he asked him whether he had been any while dead.

⁴⁵And when he knew *it* of the centurion, he gave the body to Joseph.

JOHN 19:

³⁹And there came also Nicodemus, which at the first came to Jesus by night, and brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about an hundred pound *weight*.

⁴⁰Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury.

⁴¹Now in the place where he was crucified there was a garden; and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid.

⁴²There laid they Jesus therefore because of the Jews' preparation *day*; for the sepulchre was nigh at hand.

MATTHEW 27:

⁶⁰And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed.

⁶¹And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sepulchre.

2ND WITNESS

(Note: from Thursday evening until Friday evening is the "Preparation". From Friday evening to Saturday evening is the "Sabbath". Because of this lack of understanding, religious leaders misunderstood and thought Jesus was crucified on Friday. However, it was on Thursday and his body was removed from the cross Thursday evening.)

MATTHEW 24:

²³Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe it not.

²⁴For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if *it were possible*, they shall deceive the very elect.

²⁵Behold, I have told you before.

²⁶Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, he is in the secret chambers; believe it not.

(Shroud of Turin deception coming?)

MATTHEW 24:

¹⁵When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:)

¹⁶Then let them which be in Judaea flee into the mountains:

¹⁷Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take any thing out of his house:

¹⁸Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes.

("Official" unveiling of the antichrist in Jerusalem.)

THE RESURRECTIONS

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

⁶²Now the next day, that followed the day of the preparation,

...the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate,

⁶³Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again.

⁶⁴Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first.

⁶⁵Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch: go your way, make *it* as sure as ye can.

⁶⁶So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

LUKE 24:

¹Now upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning...

MARK 16:

¹...Mary Magdalene, and Mary the *mother* of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him.

²And very early in the morning the first *day* of the week, they came unto the sepulchre at the rising of the sun.

³And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre?

MATTHEW 24:

¹⁹And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days!

²⁰But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day:

²¹For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.

⁹Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake.

¹⁰And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

²²And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.

(*"sponsored by the antichrist"*)

(*No sabbath day of rest if the antichrist spirit of religion rules.*)

(*Mark of the Beast mandate.*)

DANIEL 12:

¹¹And from the time that the daily sacrifice shall be taken away, and the abomination that maketh desolate set up, *there shall be* a thousand two hundred and ninety days. ¹²Blessed *is* he that waiteth, and cometh to the thousand three hundred and five and thirty days.

(*1335 – 1290 = 45 days?*)

(*Part 3 of the resurrection of the just, including the rapture, at the beginning of the 7th trumpet, just prior to Armageddon.*)

THE RESURRECTIONS

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 28:

²And, behold, there was a great [earthquake](#): for

...the [angel of the Lord descended](#) from heaven, and came

...and [rolled back the stone from the door \(of the sepulchre\)](#),

...and [sat upon it](#).

2ND WITNESS

REVELATION 6:

¹²And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and, lo, there was a great [earthquake](#); and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood;

¹³And the [stars of heaven fell](#) unto the earth, even as a fig tree casteth her untimely figs, when she is [shaken](#) of a mighty wind.

¹⁴And the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together; and every mountain and island were moved out of their places.

¹⁵And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every bondman, and every free man,

...[hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains](#);

¹⁶And said to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of [him that sitteth on the throne](#), and from the wrath of the Lamb:

¹⁷For the great day of his wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand?

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 10:

¹And I saw [another mighty angel come down](#) from heaven, clothed with a cloud: and a rainbow was upon his head, and his face was as it were the sun, and his feet as pillars of fire:

²And he had in his hand a little book open: and he set his right foot upon the sea, and *his* left *foot* on the earth,

³And [cried with a loud voice](#), as *when* a lion roareth: and when he had cried, seven thunders uttered their voices.

⁴And when the seven thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Seal up those things which the [seven thunders](#) uttered, and write them not.

⁵And the angel which I saw stand upon the sea and upon the earth lifted up his hand to heaven,

⁶And sware by [him that liveth for ever and ever](#), who created heaven, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which are therein, that [there should be time no longer](#):

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 11:

¹¹And after three days and an half the Spirit of life from God entered into them, and they stood upon their feet; and great fear fell upon them which saw them.

¹²And they heard a great [voice](#) from heaven saying unto them, [Come up hither](#). And they [ascended up to heaven](#) in a cloud; and their enemies beheld them.

¹³And the same hour was there a great [earthquake](#), and the tenth part of the city fell, and in the earthquake were slain of men seven thousand: and the remnant were affrighted,

...and gave glory to [the God of heaven](#).

5TH WITNESS

REVELATION 16:

THE RESURRECTIONS

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

⁵²And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose,

⁵³And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 24:

³⁰And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.

³¹And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet,

...and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 10:

⁷But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound,

...the mystery of God should be finished, as he hath declared to his servants the prophets.

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 11:

¹⁴The second woe is past; *and*, behold, the third woe cometh quickly.

¹⁵And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven,

...saying, The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ; and he shall reign for ever and ever.

5TH WITNESS

REVELATION 16:

¹⁵Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed *is* he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame.

¹⁶And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon.

¹⁷And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, ...saying, It is done.

¹⁸And there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, *and* so great.

THE RESURRECTIONS

1ST WITNESS

LUKE 24:

³And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus.

⁴And it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments:

⁵And as they were afraid, and bowed down *their* faces to the earth, they said unto them, *Why* seek ye the living among the dead?

⁶He is not here, but is risen: remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee,

⁷Saying, The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again.

⁸And they remembered his words,

2ND WITNESS

MATTHEW 24:

³⁵Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.

³⁶But of that day and hour knoweth no *man*, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.

3RD WITNESS

REVELATION 10:

4TH WITNESS

REVELATION 11:

¹⁶And the four and twenty elders, which sat before God on their seats, fell upon their faces, and worshipped God, ¹⁷Saying, We give thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, which art, and wast, and art to come; because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned.

¹⁸And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great; and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth.

¹⁹And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in his temple the ark of his testament: and there were lightnings, and voices, and thunderings, and an earthquake, and great hail.

5TH WITNESS

REVELATION 16:

¹⁹And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell: and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of his wrath.

²⁰And every island fled away, and the mountains were not found.

²¹And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven, every stone about the weight of a talent: and men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail; for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

APPENDICES

APPENDIX A

HEBREW LETTER “ה” (HE)

In the Old Testament, certain individuals have the letter “H” in their name; however, in the New Testament the names of these same individuals have a different spelling. The “H” is no longer there and is sometimes substituted with an “S”.

<u>Old Testament</u>		<u>New Testament</u>	
Elijah	(1 Kings 17:1)	Elias	(Matt. 11:14)
Elishah	(1 Kings 19:16)	Eliseus	(Luke 4:27)
Isaiah	(2 Kings 19:2)	Esaias	(Mark 7:6)
Jeremiah	(2 Chron. 36:21)	Jeremy	(Matt. 2:17)

The Hebrew letter for “H” is “ה” (HE) and it means to behold or to see with the eyes. One of the central themes in the New Testament is:

“For we walk by faith, not by sight:” 2 Corinthians 5:7

The word “faith” appears in the Old Testament two times but it appears in the New Testament over 200 times. Apparently, in order to emphasize the importance of faith, the names of certain Old Testament individuals have a different spelling in the New Testament so that the focus is on believing and not on seeing; on the spiritual and not on the physical; on Jesus and not on the law.

“And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, **The kingdom of God cometh not with observation.**”
Luke 17:20

“Then saith he to Thomas, **Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust *it* into my side: and be not faithless, but believing.** And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God. Jesus saith unto him, **Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.**”
John 20:27-29

“And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, **Believe ye that I am able to do this?** They said unto him, Yea, Lord. Then touched he their eyes, saying, **According to your faith be it unto you.** And their eyes were opened...”
Matthew 9:28-30

“For Christ *is* the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.”
Romans 10:4

“...believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead...”
Romans 10:9

APPENDIX B

BIBLE ARCHAEOLOGY

Jerusalem was historically vulnerable from an attack from the north because of access by Mount Moriah. The city was relatively safe from attack from the east, west, and south due to the valleys. Historical records indicate that crucifixion sites were alongside major roads out of the city, with the northern exit out of the city being a primary road to Damascus via the Damascus gate. It is along this road to the north that the hill of Golgotha is adjacent and it is the site where Jesus was crucified. Jerusalem is geographically described as follows:

WEST

Mount Zion – captured and named
City of David
Hinnom Valley – boundary between
Judah and Benjamin

NORTH

Mount Moriah – site of Solomon's
Temple and site of Golgotha hill
where Jesus was crucified and the
Ark of the Covenant is presently
located
Tyropoeon Valley – central
Jerusalem

EAST

Mount of Olives – site of the
ascension of Jesus and His future
return to earth
Kidron Valley – a common burial
ground

For more information about Jerusalem's biblical archaeology such as the Ark of the Covenant, Solomon's Temple, and the tomb of Jesus, please visit these Web sites:

<http://www.ronwyatt.com/>

<http://www.wyattmuseum.com/>

http://www.fireofthelordministries.org/DL_2.html

APPENDIX C

ADDITIONAL TOPICS FOR STUDY

Moses on Mount Sinai 40 days/nights
compare with
Elijah's Journey to Mount Horeb 40 days/nights
compare with
Jesus in the Wilderness 40 days/nights

1 Kings 21 Jezebel
compare with
Revelation 17 Mother of Harlots

Saul Persecuting David
compare with
Paul Persecuting Jesus Followers

Genesis 22 Abraham to Sacrifice Isaac
compare with
Psalm 22 the Father to Sacrifice Jesus

Genesis 23 Sarah's Death & Burial in the Cave
compare with
Psalm 23 Death & Burial of Jesus

Genesis 24 Abraham Seeks a Wife for Isaac
compare with
Psalm 24 Resurrection of Jesus with the Bride of Christ

The 12 Tribes' Symbols and Camp Locations
compare with
Ezekiel 1 and 10 Four Cherubs and Four Winds
compare with
Zodiac Constellations and Locations

John the Baptist sees the 1st Coming of Jesus
compare with
Saint John sees the 2nd Coming of Jesus

APPENDIX D

BOOK OF DANIEL CHRONOLOGICAL ORDER

The book of Daniel is not written in chronological order. It is better described as semi-chronological. Following below are the chapters of Daniel in chronological order along with major events of the chapter. The chronology clue is that in the first verse of most of the chapters there will be the year of the reign of the king that ruled over the land of Israel during the time of Daniel, around 534 B.C. The kings ruled in the following order: Jehoiakim king of Judah, Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon, Belshazzar son of Nebuchadnezzar and king of Babylon, Darius king of Media (the Medes), and Cyrus king of Persia. Two hundred years later in the year 333 B.C. Persia is conquered by Alexander the Great of the Macedonian Empire (Grecia). In the year 168 B.C., the Roman Empire becomes a power by defeating the kingdom of Macedon and reaches the fullness of power around the year 80 A.D. The Roman Empire ceases to exist around the year 426 A.D. and is replaced by the spiritual Roman Empire of the Vatican which will eventually transition into the one world government of the last days.

Daniel Chapter 1:

Nebuchadnezzar besieges Jerusalem and overthrows Jehoiakim in the third year of Jehoiakim's reign.

Daniel Chapter 2:

Nebuchadnezzar is in the second year of his reign and dreams of a great image.

Head of gold symbolizes Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon.

Breast & arms of silver symbolize Darius king of Media and Cyrus king of Persia (Medo-Persia).

Belly & thighs of brass symbolize Alexander the Great, king of Macedonia (Grecia).

Legs of iron symbolize Caesar, emperor of Roman Empire.

Feet & toes of iron and clay symbolize the Pope, emperor of post-Roman Empire.

Daniel Chapter 3:

Nebuchadnezzar sets up an image of gold and throws three Jewish youth into the fire. The LORD delivers the youth out of the fire. Nebuchadnezzar's ego was inflated after his dream in Daniel chapter 2 about him being the head of gold. Thus motivated, he proceeded to set up an image of gold that required all to worship. Three Jewish youth got into trouble for not worshipping; why not Daniel? One brother's insight was that the golden image that Nebuchadnezzar set up was an image of Daniel. Thus, Daniel was not required to bow down to his own image and was not thrown into the fire.

In verse 3:25, it appears that Nebuchadnezzar saw [Jesus](#) in the spirit: "He answered and said, Lo, I see four men loose, walking in the midst of the fire, and they have no hurt; and the form of the fourth is like the Son of God."

Daniel Chapter 4:

Nebuchadnezzar praises God, has a dream of a hewn down tree, becomes a beast for seven years, and then finally praises God again.

Daniel Chapter 7:

Belshazzar is in the first year of his reign when Daniel has a "night vision" of four great beasts.

The lion with eagle's wings, plucked, is Babylon overthrown by Medo-Persia.

The bear with 3 ribs in its teeth is Medo-Persia devouring Babylon, Egypt, and Media.

The leopard with 4 heads/wings of a fowl is the Macedonian kingdom when it comes to power and then splits into four pieces: Egypt, Greece/Macedonia, Persia/Asia Minor, and Seleucid Syria.

The 4th beast with iron teeth is the Roman Empire; physical Rome followed by spiritual Rome.

There is a future fulfillment of the four beasts in the last days with the 1st beast being the U.S.A. and the 4th beast being the one world government. The little horn is the antichrist.

For more detail, see Appendix K of volume one of [The Two Witnesses](#) book.

In verse 7:13, this is one of the verses of the Old Testament that acknowledges the Father and [the Son](#): "I saw in the night visions, and, behold, *one* like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him."

In verse 7:16, Daniel talks to an angel: "I came near unto one of them that stood by, and asked him the truth of all this. So he told me, and made me know the interpretation of the things." (The angel Gabriel.)

APPENDIX D

BOOK OF DANIEL CHRONOLOGICAL ORDER

Daniel Chapter 8:

Belshazzar is in the third year of his reign. Daniel has a “morning vision” of a ram and he-goat and also of the succeeding king of fierce countenance.

In verses 8:15-16, it appears that **Jesus** is in the spirit and orders the angel Gabriel to explain the vision to Daniel: “And it came to pass, when I, *even* I Daniel, had seen the vision, and sought for the meaning, then, behold, there stood before me as the appearance of a man. And I heard a man’s voice between *the banks of Ulai*, which called, and said, Gabriel, make this *man* to understand the vision.”

The ram with two horns is the kingdom of Medo-Persia.

The he-goat of Grecia is the kingdom of Macedonia and the great horn is Alexander the Great.

The four notable horns that come out of the great horn are Egypt, Greece/Macedonia, Persia/Asia Minor, and Seleucid Syria.

The little horn is Yasser Arafat, born in Egypt, and his successor will be an antichrist type.

Daniel Chapter 5:

Belshazzar feasts with the vessels of God’s temple (sacrilege). Daniel reads the writing on the wall. It prophesies that Babylon will be overthrown by the kingdom of Medo-Persia. Belshazzar is slain.

Daniel Chapter 9:

Darius the Mede is in the first year of his reign. Daniel makes a prayer of supplication and in the evening he receives the revelation of the 70 weeks from the archangel Gabriel.

Daniel Chapter 6:

Darius sets up Daniel as 1 of 3 presidents. Daniel is thrown into the lion’s den and then delivered.

Darius glorifies the God of Daniel. What is the identity of the angel in verse 6:22 “My God hath sent his angel, and hath shut the lions’ mouths, that they have not hurt me...”?

Daniel Chapter 10:

Cyrus the Persian is in the third year of his reign. The archangel Gabriel battles the prince of Persia (a fallen angel) with the help of Michael (the archangel). Gabriel then appears to Daniel and Daniel sees a great vision and passes out. When Gabriel leaves he has to return and “...fight with the prince of Persia: and when I am gone forth, lo, the prince of Grecia shall come.” While Cyrus the Persian is in power, the fallen angel known as the prince of Persia (a high-ranking demonic principality) has territorial rights in that area. After Alexander the Great (Grecia) defeats Persia, then the fallen angel known as the prince of Grecia will have territorial rights over that area. It appears that the Lord’s angels have to do battle from time to time when they enter hostile territory to relay messages to the saints.

Daniel Chapter 11:

Gabriel then explains the vision of the time of the end to Daniel. The verse: “1st year of Darius” is not a chronological verse but is in reference to Daniel 9:21. For a discussion of Daniel chapter 11 and its meaning, see volume one of The Two Witnesses book, Chapter 28. It explains that Daniel chapter 11 had a historical fulfillment and it will also have a future fulfillment, taking place even now. The main focus of Daniel chapter 11 is that Israel will be attacked from within by Arab neighbors and from without by Rome and its agents. Daniel 11:21-31 corresponds to the little horn of Daniel chapter 8 and Daniel 11:40-45 corresponds to the little horn of Daniel chapter 7.

Daniel Chapter 12:

The archangel Gabriel continues with an explanation of the time of Jacob’s trouble (the great tribulation) and the sign of Israel being delivered by Michael the archangel. The resurrection takes place.

In verses 12:6-7, “the man clothed in linen” is referring to an angel. What is his identity?

APPENDIX E

BOOK OF REVELATION CHRONOLOGICAL ORDER

Before someone can attempt to put the book of Revelation into chronological order, it must be understood that it is composed of two halves: a first witness and a second witness. In the following chart there is a dark border around Chapters 6-10 because it is the first witness and there is a dark border around Chapters 11-18 because it is the second witness. It represents the same subject matter told twice.

"...In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established." 2 Cor. 13:1

The general subject matter is the same in these two halves of scripture but each half contains certain details that the other does not so that the whole together represents the entire story. This principle is also true with the four Gospels.

For example, there is only one group of 144,000 that are sealed but because the story appears twice in Chapters 7 and 14, there have been prophecy books written that say there are two groups of 144,000! Be careful what you read.

In the following chart, the first major sequence of events is the seven seals and the second major sequence of events is the seven trumpets/bowls/vials. The reader must take the time necessary to understand the chart because it is not possible with just a glance. There is too much information on it to absorb if it is being read quickly.

What can be seen is that there is a tremendous amount of activity that takes place during the fifth seal. This will be a time of testing and trial for God's people and if we can endure until the sixth seal, then that is when God will place His remnant in a type of land of Goshen, most likely near Jerusalem (Rev. 11:13, Jeremiah 51:50). We will be on the "sidelines" while God pours out His trumpet judgments upon the devil's kingdom until the Second Coming of Jesus.

THE BOOK OF REVELATION - Chronology of Events

Revelation Event in approx. Chronological Order:	Chapter 1-5	1st WITNESS					Jerusalem	Israel	the World	2nd WITNESS								
		Chapter 6	Chapter 7	Chapter 8	Chapter 9	Chapter 10	Chapter 11	Chapter 12	Chapter 13	Chapter 14	Chapter 15	Chapter 16	Chapter 17	Chapter 18	Chapter 19	Chapter 20	Chapter 21	Chapter 22
The Visitation of the Lord	Ch. 1																	
7 Letters to the 7 Churches	Ch. 2-3																	
Throne Room of Heaven	Ch. 4-5																	
1st Seal - the white horse of deception		v. 1-2																
2nd Seal - the red horse of war		v. 3-4																
3rd Seal - the black horse of famine		v. 5-6																
4th Seal - the pale horse of pestilence & death		v. 7-8																
5th Seal - persecution part 1		v. 9																
No wind			v. 1-8															
Jerusalem surrounded									v. 1-4									
Sealing & Advent of the 144,000 / the man child / and resurrection part 2	v. 4:1		v. 2-8						v. 5		v. 1-5							
Everlasting gospel preached on earth											v. 6-7							
God's Temple measured								v. 1										
Judgment on great Babylon begins World War III, the devil is cast down		v. 10							v. 7-10		v. 8			v. 1-7, 15-18	v. 1-24	v. 1-3		
Jerusalem is taken over for 42 months								v. 2	v. 6, 13-14									
Advent of the 2 witnesses								v. 3-4										
Advent of the antichrist									v. 12	v. 1-5, 11-15	v. 9-11		v. 8-13					
5th Seal - persecution part 2 and the Mark of the Beast		v. 11							v. 15-17	v. 6-10, 16-18	v. 12							
Martyrs in white			v. 9-17					v. 5	v. 11		v. 13-16	v. 2-4						
6th Seal - a great shaking, the stars fall, men hide in caves & mountains (while the remnant are hidden in a land of Goshen, near Jerusalem)		v. 12,14																
		v. 13, 15-17																
7th Seal - seven angels with trumpets come forth, then voices & earthquake					v. 1-6													
- seven angels come forth with seven plagues (wrath of God), then a great voice												v. 1, 5-8	v. 1					

THE BOOK OF REVELATION - Chronology of Events

Revelation Event in approx. Chronological Order:	1st WITNESS						Jerusalem	Israel	the World	2nd WITNESS								
	Chapter 1-5	Chapter 6	Chapter 7	Chapter 8	Chapter 9	Chapter 10	Chapter 11	Chapter 12	Chapter 13	Chapter 14	Chapter 15	Chapter 16	Chapter 17	Chapter 18	Chapter 19	Chapter 20	Chapter 21	Chapter 22
1st Trumpet - hail, fire, blood cast upon earth, 1/3 of trees & all grass burnt				v. 7			v. 6											
1st Bowl / Vial - an awful sore on those with the mark of the beast												v. 2						
2nd Trumpet - a great burning mountain cast into sea, 1/3 of marine life dies				v. 8-9														
2nd Bowl / Vial - sea becomes blood, every living soul in the sea dies												v. 3						
3rd Trumpet - a great flaming star falls and poisons 1/3 of fresh water (wormwood)				v. 10-11														
3rd Bowl / Vial - fresh water becomes blood, reaping the killing of those who carried living water												v. 4-7						
4th Trumpet - sun/moon/ star light darkened by 1/3				v. 12														
4th Bowl / Vial - men scorched with fire of the sun												v. 8-9						
5th Trumpet - 1st woe, a falling star opens the bottomless pit and stinging locusts come forth to torment the lost people				v. 13	v. 1-12													
5th Bowl / Vial - the seat of the beast / devil's kingdom full of darkness, the people are in pain												v. 10-11						
6th Trumpet - 2nd woe, the four angels of Euphrates are loosed to kill 1/3 of men with a 200 million person army				v. 13	v. 13-21		v. 7-10											
6th Bowl / Vial - armies of the earth gather together at Armageddon to battle												v. 12-14, 16	v. 14					

APPENDIX F

INFINITY BIBLE CODE ALPHABETS

Appendix I of volume one of The Two Witnesses has a short introduction to the Infinity Bible Code. Basically, each letter of the alphabet has a numerical value. By summing the values of the letters in a word the numerical value of the word is discovered. The number of a person's name can be determined in the same way as with any word. The person can then go to the corresponding chapters in the Bible that match the number of a word or person's name. A person's first, second, and last name each have a number as well as the whole name. An example is included in this appendix, using the English alphabet. Also included in this appendix are the Old Testament Hebrew and New Testament Greek alphabets for reference when doing deeper studies with the Infinity Bible Code.

Here are two Web sites for further research on the Infinity Bible Code:

<http://www.infinitybiblecode.org/>
<http://biblecode.info.tm/index.php?page=audio%20target=>

Below is a Web site that also has Infinity Bible Code information, including a free Excel file for automatic conversion of words or names into numbers using the English alphabet:

http://www.fireofthelordministries.org/DL_3.html

APPENDIX F

INFINITY BIBLE CODE ALPHABETS

HEBREW ALPHABET

				NUMERICAL VALUE
1	א	ALEPH	A, E	1
2	ב	BETH	B	2
3	ג	GIMEL	G, Gh	3
4	ד	DALETH	D, Dh	4
5	ה	HE	H	5
6	ו	VAU	O, U, V, W	6
7	ז	ZAYIN	Z	7
8	ח	CHETH	Ch, H	8
9	ט	TETH	T	9
10	י	JOD	I, J, Y	10
11	כ (ך)	KAPH	K, Kh	20
12	ל	LAMED	L	30
13	מ (ם)	MEM	M	40
14	נ (ן)	NUN	N	50
15	ס	SAMECH	S	60
16	ע	AYIN	A, O, E	70
17	פ (ף)	PE	P, Ph	80
18	צ (ץ)	TZADDI	Tz, Ts	90
19	ק	QOPH	Q	100
20	ר	RESH	R	200
21	ש	SCHIN	S, Sh	300
22	ת	TAU	T, Th	400

APPENDIX F

INFINITY BIBLE CODE ALPHABETS

GREEK ALPHABET

					NUMERICAL VALUE
1	α A	ALPHA	A		1
2	β B	BETA	B		2
3	γ Γ	GAMMA	G		3
4	δ Δ	DELTA	D		4
5	ε E	EPSILON	E		5
6	ς *	STIGMA	S		6
7	ζ Z	ZETA	Z		7
8	η H	ETA	H		8
9	θ Θ	THETA	TH		9
10	ι I	IOTA	I		10
11	κ K	KAPPA	K		20
12	λ Λ	LAMBDA	L		30
13	μ M	MU	M		40
14	ν N	NU	N		50
15	ξ Ξ	XI	X		60
16	ο O	OMICRON	O		70
17	π Π	PI	P		80
18	ρ P	RHO	R		100
19	σ Σ	SIGMA	S		200
20	τ T	TAU	T		300
21	υ Υ	UPSILON	U		400
22	φ Φ	PHI	PH		500
23	χ X	CHI	CH		600
24	ψ Ψ	PSI	PS		700
25	ω Ω	OMEGA	Long O		800

*Final "s"

Unused letters with arbitrary symbols per E.W. Bullinger:

	C	KOPPA	?	90
	ε	SAMPSI	?	900

APPENDIX F

INFINITY BIBLE CODE ALPHABETS

ENGLISH ALPHABET

Example:

A	=	1
B	=	2
C	=	3
D	=	4
E	=	5
F	=	6
G	=	7
H	=	8
I	=	9
J	=	10
K	=	20
L	=	30
M	=	40
N	=	50
O	=	60
P	=	70
Q	=	80
R	=	90
S	=	100
T	=	200
U	=	300
V	=	400
W	=	500
X	=	600
Y	=	700
Z	=	800

WILLIAM
500+9+30+30+9+1+40 = 619

MARRION
40+1+90+90+9+60+50 = 340

BRANHAM
2+90+1+50+8+1+40 = 192

TOTAL = **1151**

$1151 - 929^* = 222$ (OT) = Judges 11

$1151 - (260^* \times 4) = 111$ (NT) = James 5

*Recall that there are 929 chapters in the Old Testament and 260 chapters in the New Test. This math technique is called "wrapping".

APPENDIX G

TRIUMPHAL ENTRY

Faith in the Lord Jesus is a matter of life and death. To those who believe: everlasting life. To those who do not believe: everlasting torment. The idea is not new but repeated many times over and still the unbelievers outnumber the believers. The problem is with the religious leaders. People have a hunger for the truth of the Word, but religious leaders contaminate it with their self-serving leaven and lead people astray, whether it was the Old Testament Jews or the modern day Christians, the principle is the same. A religious spirit is from the pit of hell and seeks to put people into bondage. In the Bible pattern below, if the Word of God is rejected, desolation follows. If Jesus is not believed as the Son of God, desolation follows. Those who believe receive blessing.

ISAIAH 6:9-10

⁶Then flew one of the seraphims unto me, having a live coal in his hand, *which* he had taken with the tongs from off the altar:

⁷And he laid *it* upon my mouth, and said, Lo, this hath touched thy lips; and thine iniquity is taken away, and thy sin purged.

⁸Also I heard the voice of the Lord, saying, Whom shall I send, and who will go for us? Then said I, Here *am* I; send me.

⁹And he said, Go, and tell this people, Hear ye indeed, but understand not; and see ye indeed, but perceive not.

¹⁰Make the heart of this people fat, and make their ears heavy, and shut their eyes; lest they see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and convert, and be healed.

¹¹Then said I, Lord, how long? And he answered, Until the cities be wasted without inhabitant, and the houses without man, and the land be utterly desolate,

¹²And the LORD have removed men far away, and *there be* a great forsaking in the midst of the land.

MATTHEW 13:13-15

¹⁰And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables?

¹¹He answered and said unto them, **Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.**

¹²**For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath.**

¹³**Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand.**

¹⁴**And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive:**

¹⁵**For this people's heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.**

¹⁶**But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear.**

¹⁷**For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.**

ACTS 28:23-29

²³And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him into *his* lodging; to whom he expounded and testified the kingdom of God, persuading them concerning Jesus, both out of the law of Moses, and *out of* the prophets, from morning till evening.

²⁴And some believed the things which were spoken, and some believed not.

²⁵And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word, Well spake the Holy Ghost by Esaias the prophet unto our fathers,

²⁶Saying, Go unto this people, and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive:

²⁷For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

²⁸Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and *that* they will hear it.

²⁹And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.

APPENDIX G

TRIUMPHAL ENTRY

In the following Bible pattern from the four Gospels, the contrast between believers and unbelievers continues, except it goes to a deeper level of revelation as to the spiritual consequence of unbelief.

The subject is the triumphal entry of Jesus into Jerusalem, a few days before the Feast of Passover. The people rejoiced as their Messiah came into the city while the religious leaders (chief priests, scribes, Pharisees, Sadducees) were offended and opposed the idea that Jesus be received as the King of Israel. Please refer to Chapter 26 (Descent from the Mount) for details of the revelation that the triumphal entry was a type for the journey of three days and three nights that Jesus took into the heart of the earth in order to lead captivity captive.

TRIUMPHAL ENTRY

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 21:

¹And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus **two** disciples,

²Saying unto them, **Go into the village over against you, and straightway ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her: loose *them*, and bring *them* unto me.**

³**And if any *man* say ought unto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them; and straightway he will send them.**

⁴All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying,

⁵Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass.

(*Zechariah 9:9*)

2ND WITNESS

MARK 11:

¹And when they came nigh to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, he sendeth forth **two** of his disciples,

²And saith unto them, **Go your way into the village over against you: and as soon as ye be entered into it, ye shall find a colt tied, whereon never man sat; loose him, and bring *him*.**

³**And if any man say unto you, Why do ye this? say ye that the Lord hath need of him; and straightway he will send him hither.**

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 19:

²⁸And when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending up to Jerusalem.

²⁹And it came to pass, when he was come nigh to Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount called *the mount* of Olives, he sent **two** of his disciples,

³⁰Saying, **Go ye into the village over against you; in the which at your entering ye shall find a colt tied, whereon yet never man sat: loose him, and bring *him hither*.**

³¹And if any man ask you, Why do ye loose *him*? thus shall ye say unto him, Because the Lord hath need of him.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 12:

⁹Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: and they came not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.

¹⁰But the chief priests consulted that they might put Lazarus also to death;

¹¹Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

TRIUMPHAL ENTRY

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 21:

⁶And the disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them,

⁷And brought the ass, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and they set *him* thereon.

⁸And a very great multitude spread their **garments** in the way; others cut down **branches** from the trees, and strawed *them* in the way.

⁹And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the Son of David:

...Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord; Hosanna in the highest.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 11:

⁴And they went their way, and found the colt tied by the door without in a place where **two ways** met; and they loose him.

⁵And certain of them that stood there said unto them, What do ye, loosing the colt?

⁶And they said unto them even as Jesus had commanded: and they let them go.

⁷And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their **garments** on him; and he sat upon him.

⁸And many spread their **garments** in the way: and others cut down **branches** off the trees, and strawed *them* in the way.

⁹And they that went before, and they that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna;

...Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord:

¹⁰Blessed *be* the kingdom of our father David, that cometh in the name of the Lord: Hosanna in the highest.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 19:

³²And they that were sent went their way, and found even as he had said unto them.

³³And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof said unto them, Why loose ye the colt?

³⁴And they said, The Lord hath need of him.

³⁵And they brought him to Jesus: and they cast their **garments** upon the colt, and they set Jesus thereon.

³⁶And as he went, they spread their clothes in the way.

³⁷And when he was come nigh, even now at the **descent of the mount of Olives**, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice for all the mighty works that they had seen;

³⁸Saying, Blessed *be* the King that cometh in the name of the Lord: peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.

³⁹And some of the **Pharisees** from among the multitude said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.

⁴⁰And he answered and said unto them, **I tell you that, if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out.**

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 12:

¹²On the next day much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that **Jesus was coming to Jerusalem**,

¹³Took **branches** of palm trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna: Blessed *is* the King of Israel that cometh in the name of the Lord.

¹⁴And Jesus, when he had found a young ass, sat thereon; as it is written,

¹⁵Fear not, daughter of Sion: behold, **thy King cometh**, sitting on an ass's colt.

¹⁶These things understood not his disciples at the first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and *that* they had done these things unto him.

TRIUMPHAL ENTRY

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 21:

¹⁰And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying, Who is this?

¹¹And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

¹²And Jesus went into the temple of God, and **cast out all them** that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them that sold doves,

¹³And said unto them, **It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves.**

¹⁴And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple; and he healed them.

¹⁵And when the **chief priests and scribes** saw the wonderful things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Son of David; they were **sore displeased,**

¹⁶And said unto him, Hearest thou what these say? And Jesus saith unto them, **Yea; have ye never read, Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?**

2ND WITNESS

MARK 11:

¹¹And **Jesus entered** into Jerusalem, and **into the temple:**

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 19:

⁴¹And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it,

⁴²Saying, **If thou hadst known,** even thou, at least in this thy day, the things *which belong* unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes.

⁴³**For the days shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side,**

⁴⁴**And shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee; and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another; because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.**

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 12:

¹⁷The people therefore that was with him when he **called Lazarus out of his grave,** and raised him from the dead, bare record.

¹⁸For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

¹⁹The **Pharisees** therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? behold, the world is gone after him.

²⁰And there were certain Greeks among them that came up to worship at the feast:

TRIUMPHAL ENTRY

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 21:

¹⁷And he left them, and went out of the city into Bethany; and he lodged there.

¹⁸Now in the morning as he returned into the city, he hungered.

¹⁹And when he saw a **fig tree** in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but **leaves only**,

...and said unto it, **Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever.** And presently the fig tree withered away.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 11:

¹¹...and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the eventide was come, he went out unto Bethany with the twelve.

¹²And on the morrow, when they were come from Bethany, he was hungry:

¹³And seeing a **fig tree** afar off having leaves, he came, if haply he might find any thing thereon: and when he came to it, he found **nothing but leaves**; for the time of figs was not yet.

¹⁴And Jesus answered and said unto it, **No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever.** And his disciples heard *it*.

3RD WITNESS

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 12:

²¹The same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus.

²²Philip cometh and telleth Andrew: and again Andrew and Philip tell Jesus.

²³And Jesus answered them, saying, **The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified.**

²⁴**Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.**

²⁵**He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal.**

²⁶**If any man serve me, let him follow me;** and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will *my* Father honour.

²⁷**Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour.**

²⁸**Father, glorify thy name.** Then came there a voice from heaven, *saying*, I have both glorified *it*, and will glorify *it* again.

²⁹The people therefore, that stood by, and heard *it*, said that it thundered: others said, An angel spake to him.

TRIUMPHAL ENTRY

1ST WITNESS

2ND WITNESS

3RD WITNESS

4TH WITNESS

MATTHEW 21:

²⁰And when the disciples saw *it*, they marvelled, saying, How soon is the fig tree withered away!

MARK 11:

¹⁵And they come to Jerusalem: and Jesus went into the temple, and began to **cast out them** that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them that sold doves;

¹⁶And would not suffer that any man should carry *any* vessel through the temple.

¹⁷And he taught, saying unto them, **Is it not written, My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but ye have made it a den of thieves.**

¹⁸And the scribes and chief priests heard *it*, and sought how they might destroy him:

...for they feared him, because all **the people was astonished at his doctrine.**

¹⁹And when even was come, he went out of the city.

²⁰And in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig tree dried up from the roots.

²¹And Peter calling to remembrance saith unto him, Master, behold, the fig tree which thou cursedst is withered away.

LUKE 19:

⁴⁵And he went into the temple, and began to **cast out them** that sold therein, and them that bought;

⁴⁶Saying unto them, **It is written, My house is the house of prayer: but ye have made it a den of thieves.**

⁴⁷And he taught daily in the temple. But the chief priests and the scribes and the chief of the people sought to destroy him,

⁴⁸And could not find what they might do: for **all the people were very attentive to hear him.**

JOHN 12:

³⁰Jesus answered and said, **This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes.**

³¹**Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out.**

TRIUMPHAL ENTRY

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 21:

²¹Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, If ye **have faith**, and doubt not, ye shall not only do this *which is done* to the fig tree, but also if ye shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; it shall be done.

²²And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in **prayer, believing**, ye shall receive.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 11:

²²And Jesus answering saith unto them, **Have faith in God**.

²³For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith.

²⁴Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye **pray, believe** that ye receive *them*, and ye shall have *them*.

²⁵And when ye stand praying, **forgive**, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses.

²⁶But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

3RD WITNESS

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 12:

³²And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all *men* unto me.

³³This he said, signifying what death he should die.

³⁴The people answered him, We have heard out of the law that Christ abideth for ever: and how sayest thou, **The Son of man must be lifted up?** who is this Son of man?

³⁵Then Jesus said unto them, **Yet a little while is the light with you. Walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you: for he that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth.**

³⁶While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light. These things spake Jesus, and departed, and did hide himself from them.

TRIUMPHAL ENTRY

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 21:

²³And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching,

...and said, **By what authority doest thou these things?** and who gave thee this authority?

²⁴And Jesus answered and said unto them, **I also will ask you one thing, which if ye tell me, I in like wise will tell you by what authority I do these things.**

²⁵**The baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men?**

...And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say unto us, Why did ye not then believe him?

²⁶But if we shall say, Of men; we fear the people; for all hold John as a prophet.

²⁷And they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell. And he said unto them, **Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.**

2ND WITNESS

MARK 11:

²⁷And they come again to Jerusalem: and as he was walking in the temple, there come to him the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders,

²⁸And say unto him, **By what authority doest thou these things?** and who gave thee this authority to do these things?

²⁹And Jesus answered and said unto them, **I will also ask of you one question, and answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things.**

³⁰**The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of men? answer me.**

³¹And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say, Why then did ye not believe him?

³²But if we shall say, Of men; they feared the people: for all *men* counted John, that he was a prophet indeed.

³³And they answered and said unto Jesus, We cannot tell. And Jesus answering saith unto them, **Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.**

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 20:

¹And it came to pass, *that* on one of those days, as he taught the people in the temple, and preached the gospel, the chief priests and the scribes came upon *him* with the elders,

²And spake unto him, saying, Tell us, **by what authority doest thou these things?** or who is he that gave thee this authority?

³And he answered and said unto them, **I will also ask you one thing; and answer me:**

⁴**The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of men?**

⁵And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say, Why then believed ye him not?

⁶But and if we say, Of men; all the people will stone us: for they be persuaded that John was a prophet.

⁷And they answered, that they could not tell whence *it was*.

⁸And Jesus said unto them, **Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.**

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 12:

³⁷But though he had done so many miracles before them, yet they believed not on him:

³⁸That the saying of Esaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake, Lord, who hath believed our report? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed?

(*Isaiah 53:1*)

TRIUMPHAL ENTRY

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 21:

*(The parable of obedience, v. 28-32.)
(The parable of the husbandmen & vineyard, v. 33-44.)*

⁴⁵And when the **chief priests and Pharisees** had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them. ⁴⁶But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet.

MATTHEW 22:

¹And Jesus answered and spake unto them again by parables, and said, *(The parable of the wedding invitation, v. 2-14.)*

¹⁵Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might entangle him in *his* talk.

¹⁶And they sent out unto him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, neither carest thou for any *man*: for thou regardest not the person of men.

¹⁷Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give tribute unto Caesar, or not? *(The temptation of Jesus concerning the penny and the tribute due Caesar, v.18-22.)*

²³The same day came to him the Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him, *(The question about the seven brothers and one wife, v.24-33.)*

2ND WITNESS

MARK 12:

¹And he began to speak unto them by parables... *(The parable of the husbandmen & vineyard, v. 1-11.)*

¹²And they sought to lay hold on him, but feared the people: for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them: and they left him, and went their way.

¹³And they send unto him certain of the Pharisees and of the Herodians, to catch him in *his* words. *(The temptation of Jesus concerning the penny and the tribute due Caesar, v.14-17.)*

¹⁸Then come unto him the Sadducees, which say there is no resurrection; and they asked him, saying... *(The question about the seven brothers and one wife, v.19-27.)*

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 20:

⁹Then began he to speak to the people this parable... *(The parable of the husbandmen & vineyard, v. 9-18.)*

¹⁹And the **chief priests and the scribes** the same hour sought to lay hands on him; and they feared the people: for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them.

²⁰And they watched *him*, and sent forth spies, which should feign themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governor.

²¹And they asked him, saying, Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither acceptest thou the person of *any*, but teachest the way of God truly:

²²Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Caesar, or no? *(The temptation of Jesus concerning the penny and the tribute due Caesar, v.23-26.)*

²⁷Then came to *him* certain of the Sadducees, which deny that there is any resurrection; and they asked him... *(The question about the seven brothers and one wife, v.28-38.)*

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 12:

³⁹Therefore they could not believe, because that Esaias said again,

⁴⁰He hath **blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart**; that they should not see with *their* eyes, nor understand with *their* heart, and be converted, and I should heal them.

(Isaiah 6:9-10)

⁴¹These things said Esaias, when he saw his glory, and spake of him.

TRIUMPHAL ENTRY

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 22:

³⁴But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together.

³⁵Then one of them, *which was a lawyer*, asked *him a question*, tempting him, and saying,

³⁶Master, which *is* the great commandment in the law?

(Jesus explains about love, v.37-40.)

⁴¹While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them,

⁴²Saying, **What think ye of Christ? whose son is he?** They say unto him, *The Son of David.*

⁴³He saith unto them, **How then doth David in spirit call him Lord, saying,**

⁴⁴The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

...till I **make thine enemies thy footstool?**

⁴⁵If David then call him Lord, how is he his son?

⁴⁶And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any *man* from that day forth ask him any more *questions*.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 12:

²⁸And one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, Which is the first

commandment of all? *(Jesus explains about love, v.29-34.)*

³⁴...And no man after that durst ask him *any question*.

³⁵And Jesus answered and said, while he taught in the temple, ...**How say the scribes that Christ is the Son of David?**

³⁶For David himself said by the Holy Ghost, The LORD said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

...till I **make thine enemies thy footstool.**

³⁷David therefore himself calleth him Lord; and whence is he *then* his son? And the common people heard him gladly.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 20:

³⁹Then certain of the scribes answering said, Master, thou hast well said.

⁴⁰And after that they durst not ask him *any question at all*.

⁴¹And he said unto them, **How say they that Christ is David's son?**

⁴²And David himself saith in the book of Psalms, The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

⁴³Till I **make thine enemies thy footstool.**

⁴⁴David therefore calleth him Lord, how is he then his son?

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 12:

⁴²Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess *him*, lest they should be put out of the synagogue:

⁴³For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God.

TRIUMPHAL ENTRY

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 23:

¹Then spake Jesus to the multitude,
and to his disciples,

*(Beware of the scribes and Pharisees,
v.2-12)*

*(Woe unto you scribes and Pharisees!
v.13-33)*

*(Jesus prophesies the desolation of
Jerusalem, v.34-38)*

³⁹For I say unto you, Ye shall not see
me henceforth, till ye shall say,
Blessed is he that cometh in the name
of the Lord.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 12:

³⁸And he said unto them in his
doctrine, **Beware of the scribes,**
which love to go in long clothing,
and love salutations in the
marketplaces,

³⁹And the chief seats in the
synagogues, and the uppermost
rooms at feasts:

⁴⁰Which devour widows' houses,
and for a pretence make long
prayers: these shall receive greater
damnation.

⁴¹And Jesus sat over against the
treasury...

(The widow with two mites, v.41-44.)

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 20:

⁴⁵Then in the audience of all the
people he said unto his disciples,

⁴⁶**Beware of the scribes,** which
desire to walk in long robes, and
love greetings in the markets, and
the highest seats in the
synagogues, and the chief rooms at
feasts;

⁴⁷Which devour widows' houses,
and for a show make long prayers:
the same shall receive greater
damnation.

LUKE 21:

¹And he looked up, and saw the rich
men casting their gifts into the
treasury.

(The widow with two mites, v.2-4.)

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 12:

⁴⁴Jesus cried and said, **He that
believeth on me,** believeth not on
me, but on him that sent me.

⁴⁵And he that seeth me seeth him
that sent me.

⁴⁶I am come a light into the world,
that whosoever **believeth on me**
should not abide in darkness.

⁴⁷And if any man hear my words,
and believe not, I judge him not:
for I came not to judge the world,
but to save the world.

⁴⁸He that **rejecteth me,** and
receiveth not my words, hath
one that **judgeth him:** the word
that I have spoken, the same shall
judge him in the last day.

⁴⁹For I have not spoken of myself;
but the Father which sent me, he
gave me a commandment, what I
should say, and what I should
speak.

⁵⁰And I know that his
commandment is life everlasting:
whatsoever I speak therefore,
even as the Father said unto me,
so I speak.

TRIUMPHAL ENTRY

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 24:

¹And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to *him* for to show him the buildings of the temple.

²And Jesus said unto them, **See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.**

³And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying,

...Tell us, when shall these things be? and what *shall be* the sign of thy coming, and of **the end of the world?**

⁴And Jesus answered and said unto them...

(*Synopsis of the last days, v.4-51.*)

2ND WITNESS

MARK 13:

¹And as he went out of the temple, one of his disciples saith unto him, Master, see what manner of stones and what buildings *are here!*

²And Jesus answering said unto him, **Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.**

³And as he sat upon the mount of Olives over against the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him privately,

⁴Tell us, when shall these things be? and what *shall be* the sign when **all these things shall be fulfilled?**

⁵And Jesus answering them began to say...

(*Synopsis of the last days, v.5-37.*)

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 21:

⁵And as some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones and gifts, he said,

⁶**As for these things which ye behold, the days will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.**

⁷And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and what sign *will there be* when **these things shall come to pass?**

⁸And he said...

(*Synopsis of the last days, v.8-36.*)

³⁷And in the day time he was **teaching in the temple**; and at night he went out, and abode in the mount that is called *the mount of Olives*.

³⁸And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, for to hear him.

4TH WITNESS

APPENDIX H

MATTHEW MARK LUKE JOHN

This chapter is a good study tool for use as a reference when studying the chronological sequence of the events that occurred during the arrest, trial, crucifixion, burial, resurrection, and ascension of Jesus. This part of the four Gospels was harmonized in order to make it easier to follow the sequential action that took place during this period in the life of Jesus 2000 years ago. It can be used to check the accuracy of Jesus movies such as "The Passion of Christ" or "Jesus of Nazareth" to see how closely they followed the Bible.

One side note: it has been said that the ministry of Jesus was three and a half years long. When the book of John is studied, it supports this because there are clearly three Passover feasts that take place:

Passover #1	John 2:13-15	"Drive out the money changers"
Passover #2	John 6:4-5	"5000 fed with loaves and fishes"
Passover #3	John 19:40-42	"Jesus in the tomb"

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

¹And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples,

²*Ye know that after two days is the feast of the passover, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified.*

³Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas,

⁴And consulted that they might take Jesus by subtlety, and kill *him*.

⁵But they said, Not on the feast *day*, lest there be an uproar among the people.

⁶Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper,

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

¹After two days was *the feast of the passover*, and of unleavened bread:

...and the chief priests and the scribes

...sought how they might take him by craft, and put *him* to death.

²But they said, Not on the feast *day*, lest there be an uproar of the people.

³And being in Bethany in the house of Simon the leper, as he sat at meat,

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

¹Now the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the Passover.

²And the chief priests and scribes

...sought how they might kill him;

...for they feared the people.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 11:

⁵⁵And the Jews' passover was nigh at hand: and many went out of the country up to Jerusalem before the passover, to purify themselves.

⁵⁶Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple, What think ye, that he will not come to the feast?

⁵⁷Now both the chief priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that, if any man knew where he were, he should show *it*,
...that they might take him.

JOHN 12:

¹Then Jesus six days before the passover came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead.

²There they made him a supper; and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

⁷There came unto him a woman having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, ...and poured it on his head, as he sat *at meat*.

⁸But when his disciples saw *it*, they had indignation, saying,

...To what purpose *is* this waste?

⁹For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor.

¹⁰When Jesus understood *it*, he said unto them, **Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good work upon me.**

¹¹**For ye have the poor always with you; but me ye have not always.**

¹²**For in that she hath poured this ointment on my body, she did *it* for my burial.**

¹³**Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached in the whole world, *there* shall also this, that this woman hath done, be told for a memorial of her.**

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

³...there came a woman having an alabaster box of ointment of spikenard very precious; and she brake the box, and poured *it* on his head.

⁴And there were some that had indignation within themselves, and said,

...Why was this waste of the ointment made?

⁵For it might have been sold for more than three hundred pence, and have been given to the poor. And they murmured against her.

⁶And Jesus said, **Let her alone; why trouble ye her? she hath wrought a good work on me.**

⁷**For ye have the poor with you always, and whensoever ye will ye may do them good: but me ye have not always.**

⁸**She hath done what she could: she is come aforehand to anoint my body to the burying.**

⁹**Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world, *this* also that she hath done shall be spoken of for a memorial of her.**

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 12:

³Then took Mary a pound of ointment of spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.

⁴Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simon's *son*, which should betray him,

⁵Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?

⁶This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein.

⁷Then said Jesus, **Let her alone: against the day of my burying hath she kept this.**

⁸**For the poor always ye have with you; but me ye have not always.**

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 12:

⁹Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: and they came not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.

¹⁰But the chief priests consulted that they might put Lazarus also to death;

¹¹Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

¹²On the next day much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem,

¹³Took branches of palm trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna: Blessed *is* the King of Israel that cometh in the name of the Lord.

¹⁴And Jesus, when he had found a young ass, sat thereon; as it is written,

¹⁵Fear not, daughter of Sion: behold, thy King cometh, sitting on an ass's colt.

¹⁶These things understood not his disciples at the first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and *that* they had done these things unto him.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 12:

¹⁷The people therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record.

¹⁸For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

¹⁹The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? behold, the world is gone after him.

²⁰And there were certain Greeks among them that came up to worship at the feast:

²¹The same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus.

²²Philip cometh and telleth Andrew: and again Andrew and Philip tell Jesus.

²³And Jesus answered them, saying, **The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified.**

²⁴**Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.**

²⁵**He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal.**

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 12:

²⁶If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will *my* Father honour.

²⁷Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour.

²⁸Father, glorify thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven, saying, I have both glorified *it*, and will glorify *it* again.

²⁹The people therefore, that stood by, and heard *it*, said that it thundered: others said, An angel spake to him.

³⁰Jesus answered and said, **This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes.**

³¹Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out.

³²And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all *men* unto me.

³³This he said, signifying what death he should die.

³⁴The people answered him, We have heard out of the law that Christ abideth for ever: and how sayest thou, **The Son of man must be lifted up?** who is this Son of man?

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 12:

³⁵Then Jesus said unto them, **Yet a little while is the light with you. Walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you: for he that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth.**

³⁶**While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light.** These things spake Jesus, and departed, and did hide himself from them.

³⁷But though he had done so many miracles before them, yet they believed not on him:

³⁸That the saying of Esaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake, Lord, who hath believed our report? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed?

³⁹Therefore they could not believe, because that Esaias said again,

⁴⁰He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart; that they should not see with *their* eyes, nor understand with *their* heart, and be converted, and I should heal them.

⁴¹These things said Esaias, when he saw his glory, and spake of him.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 12:

⁴²Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess *him*, lest they should be put out of the synagogue:

⁴³For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God.

⁴⁴Jesus cried and said, **He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me.**

⁴⁵**And he that seeth me seeth him that sent me.**

⁴⁶**I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me should not abide in darkness.**

⁴⁷**And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world.**

⁴⁸**He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.**

⁴⁹**For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak.**

⁵⁰**And I know that his commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak.**

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

¹⁴Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot,
...went unto the chief priests,
¹⁵And said *unto them*, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you?
...And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver.
¹⁶And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

¹⁰And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve,
...went unto the chief priests, to betray him unto them.
¹¹And when they heard *it*, they were glad, and promised to give him money. And he sought how he might conveniently betray him.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

³Then entered Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve.
⁴And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them.
⁵And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money.
⁶And he promised, and sought opportunity to betray him unto them in the absence of the multitude.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 12:

¹Now before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.
²And supper being ended, the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray him;
³Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God;

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

¹⁷Now the first *day* of the *feast of unleavened bread* the disciples came to Jesus, saying unto him, ...Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the passover?

¹⁸And he said,

...Go into the city to such a man,

...and say unto him, The Master saith, My time is at hand; I will keep the passover at thy house with my disciples.

¹⁹And the disciples did as Jesus had appointed them;

...and they made ready the passover.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

¹²And the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the passover, his disciples said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare that thou mayest eat the passover?

¹³And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, and saith unto them,

...Go ye into the city, and there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him.

¹⁴And wheresoever he shall go in, say ye to the goodman of the house, The Master saith, Where is the guestchamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples?

¹⁵And he will show you a large upper room furnished *and prepared: there make ready for us.*

¹⁶And his disciples went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them:

...and they made ready the passover.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

⁷Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the passover must be killed.

⁸And he sent Peter and John, saying, **Go and prepare us the passover, that we may eat.**

⁹And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare?

¹⁰And he said unto them, **Behold, when ye are entered into the city, there shall a man meet you, bearing a pitcher of water; follow him into the house where he entereth in.**

¹¹And ye shall say unto the goodman of the house, The Master saith unto thee, Where is the guestchamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples?

¹²And he shall show you a large upper room furnished: there make ready.

¹³And they went, and found as he had said unto them:

...and they made ready the passover.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 13:

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

²⁰Now when the even was come, he sat down with the twelve.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

¹⁷And in the evening he cometh with the twelve.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

¹⁴And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him.

¹⁵And he said unto them, *With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer:*

¹⁶*For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God.*

¹⁷And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, *Take this, and divide it among yourselves:*

¹⁸*For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.*

¹⁹And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, *This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me.*

²⁰Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, *This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you.*

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 13:

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 13:

⁴He riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments; and took a towel, and girded himself.

⁵After that he poureth water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe *them* with the towel wherewith he was girded.

⁶Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and Peter saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet?

⁷Jesus answered and said unto him, **What I do thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter.**

⁸Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, **If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me.**

⁹Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also *my* hands and *my* head.

¹⁰Jesus saith to him, **He that is washed needeth not save to wash *his* feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all.**

¹¹For he knew who should betray him; therefore said he, **Ye are not all clean.**

¹²So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto them, **Know ye what I have done to you?**

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

²¹And as they did eat, he said, *Verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.*

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

¹⁸And as they sat and did eat, Jesus said, *Verily I say unto you, One of you which eateth with me shall betray me.*

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

²¹But, behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me *is* with me on the table.
²²And truly the Son of man goeth, as it was determined: but woe unto that man by whom he is betrayed!

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 13:

¹³*Ye call me Master and Lord: and ye say well; for so I am.*
¹⁴*If I then, your Lord and Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet.*
¹⁵*For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you.*
¹⁶*Verily, verily, I say unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord; neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him.*
¹⁷*If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them.*
¹⁸*I speak not of you all: I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel against me.*
¹⁹*Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am *he*.*
²⁰*Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.*
²¹*When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.*

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

²²And they were exceeding sorrowful, and began every one of them to say unto him, Lord, is it I?

²³And he answered and said, **He that dippeth *his* hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me.**

²⁴**The Son of man goeth as it is written of him: but woe unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! it had been good for that man if he had not been born.**

²⁵Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, **Thou hast said.**

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

¹⁹And they began to be sorrowful, and to say unto him one by one, *Is it I?* and another *said, Is it I?*

²⁰And he answered and said unto them, ***It is one of the twelve, that dippeth with me in the dish.***

²¹**The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him: but woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! good were it for that man if he had never been born.**

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

²³And they began to inquire among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 13:

²²Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.

²³Now there was leaning on Jesus' bosom one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved.

²⁴Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake.

²⁵He then lying on Jesus' breast saith unto him, Lord, who is it?

²⁶Jesus answered, **He it is, to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped *it*.**

...And when he had dipped the sop, he gave *it* to Judas Iscariot, ***the son*** of Simon.

²⁷And after the sop Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him, **That thou doest, do quickly.**

²⁸Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto him.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 13:

²⁹For some of *them* thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy *those things* that we have need of against the feast; or, that he should give something to the poor.

³⁰He then having received the sop went immediately out: and it was night.

²⁴And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest.

²⁵And he said unto them, **The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors.**

²⁶**But ye *shall* not *be* so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve.**

²⁷For whether *is* greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? *is* not he that sitteth at meat? but I am among you as he that serveth.

²⁸Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations.

²⁹And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me;

³⁰That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 13:

³¹Therefore, when he was gone out, Jesus said, **Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him.**

³²**If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorify him in himself, and shall straightway glorify him.**

³³**Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me: and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; so now I say to you.**

³⁴**A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another.**

³⁵**By this shall all *men* know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.**

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 28:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 16:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 13:

³⁶Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered him, *Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now; but thou shalt follow me afterwards.*

³¹And the Lord said, *Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat:*
³²*But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.*
³³And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee, both into prison, and to death.

³⁴And he said, *I tell thee, Peter, the cock shall not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.*

³⁵And he said unto them, *When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing?* And they said, Nothing.

³⁶Then said he unto them, *But now, he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise his scrip: and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one.*

³⁷For I say unto you, that this that is written must yet be accomplished in me, *And he was reckoned among the transgressors: for the things concerning me have an end.*

³⁸And they said, Lord, behold, here are two swords. And he said unto them, *It is enough.*

³⁷Peter said unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thy sake.

³⁸Jesus answered him, *Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake? Verily, verily, I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.*

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 28:

²⁶And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed *it*, and brake *it*, and gave *it* to the disciples, and said, **Take, eat; this is my body.**

²⁷And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave *it* to them, saying, **Drink ye all of it;**

²⁸**For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.**

²⁹**But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom.**

³⁰And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.

³¹Then saith Jesus unto them, **All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.**

³²**But after I am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee.**

³³Peter answered and said unto him, Though all *men* shall be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended.

³⁴Jesus said unto him, **Verily I say unto thee, That this night, before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.**

³⁵Peter said unto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee. Likewise also said all the disciples.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 16:

²²And as they did eat, Jesus took bread, and blessed, and brake *it*, and gave to them, and said,

Take, eat: this is my body.

²³And he took the cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave *it* to them: and they all drank of it.

²⁴And he said unto them, **This is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many.**

²⁵**Verily I say unto you, I will drink no more of the fruit of the vine, until that day that I drink it new in the kingdom of God.**

²⁶And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.

²⁷And Jesus saith unto them, **All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered.**

²⁸**But after that I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee.**

²⁹But Peter said unto him, Although all shall be offended, yet *will* not I.

³⁰And Jesus saith unto him, **Verily I say unto thee, That this day, even in this night, before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice.**

³¹But he spake the more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in any wise. Likewise also said they all.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

³⁹And he came out, and went, as he was wont, to the mount of Olives; and his disciples also followed him.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 13:

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 14:

¹Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me.

²In my Father's house are many mansions: if *it were* not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you.

³And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, *there* ye may be also.

⁴And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.

⁵Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way?

⁶Jesus saith unto him, **I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.**

⁷If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.

(...continues with verses 8-31)

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 15:

¹ I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.

² Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every *branch* that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.

³ Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you.

⁴ Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

⁵ I am the vine, ye *are* the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.

⁶ If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast *them* into the fire, and they are burned.

⁷ If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.

⁸ Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples.

(...continues with verses 9-27)

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 16:

¹These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended.

²They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service.

³And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me.

⁴But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you.

⁵But now I go my way to him that sent me; and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?

⁶But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart.

⁷Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you.

(...continues with verses 8-33)

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 17:

¹These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, **Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee:**

²**As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him.**

³**And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent.**

⁴**I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do.**

⁵**And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.**

⁶**I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word.**

⁷**Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee.**

(...continues with verses 8-26)

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

³⁶Then cometh Jesus with them unto a place called Gethsemane, and saith unto the disciples, **Sit ye here, while I go and pray yonder.**

³⁷And he took with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful and very heavy.

³⁸Then saith he unto them, **My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: tarry ye here, and watch with me.**

³⁹And he went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying,

...O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless not as I will, but as thou wilt.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

³²And they came to a place which was named Gethsemane: and he saith to his disciples, **Sit ye here, while I shall pray.**

³³And he taketh with him Peter and James and John, and began to be sore amazed, and to be very heavy;

³⁴And saith unto them, **My soul is exceeding sorrowful unto death: tarry ye here, and watch.**

³⁵And he went forward a little, and fell on the ground, and prayed that, if it were possible, the hour might pass from him.

³⁶And he said, **Abba, Father, all things are possible unto thee; take away this cup from me: nevertheless not what I will, but what thou wilt.**

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

⁴⁰And when he was at the place, he said unto them, **Pray that ye enter not into temptation.**

⁴¹And he was withdrawn from them about a stone's cast, and kneeled down, and prayed,

⁴²Saying, **Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done.**

⁴³And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him.

⁴⁴And being in an agony he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 18:

¹When Jesus had spoken these words, he went forth with his disciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entered, and his disciples.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

⁴⁰And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep,

...and saith unto Peter, *What, could ye not watch with me one hour?*

⁴¹*Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.*

⁴²He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, *O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done.*

⁴³And he came and found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy.

⁴⁴And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.

⁴⁵Then cometh he to his disciples, and saith unto them, *Sleep on now, and take your rest: behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.*

⁴⁶*Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that doth betray me.*

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

³⁷And he cometh, and findeth them sleeping,

...and saith unto Peter, *Simon, sleepest thou? couldest not thou watch one hour?*

³⁸*Watch ye and pray, lest ye enter into temptation. The spirit truly is ready, but the flesh is weak.*

³⁹And again he went away, and prayed, and spake the same words.

⁴⁰And when he returned, he found them asleep again, (for their eyes were heavy,) neither wist they what to answer him.

⁴¹And he cometh the third time, and saith unto them, *Sleep on now, and take your rest: it is enough, the hour is come; behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.*

⁴²*Rise up, let us go; lo, he that betrayeth me is at hand.*

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

⁴⁵And when he rose up from prayer, and was come to his disciples, he found them sleeping for sorrow,

⁴⁶And said unto them, *Why sleep ye?*

...rise and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 18:

²And Judas also, which betrayed him, knew the place: for Jesus oftentimes resorted thither with his disciples.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

⁴⁷And while he yet spake, lo, Judas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and elders of the people.

⁴⁸Now he that betrayed him gave them a sign, saying,
...Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he: hold him fast.

⁴⁹And forthwith he came to Jesus, and said,
...Hail, master; and kissed him.

⁵⁰And Jesus said unto him, **Friend, wherefore art thou come?**

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

⁴³And immediately, while he yet spake, cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and the scribes and the elders.

⁴⁴And he that betrayed him had given them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he; take him, and lead *him* away safely.

⁴⁵And as soon as he was come, he goeth straightway to him, and saith, Master, master; and kissed him.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

⁴⁷And while he yet spake, behold a multitude, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them,

...and drew near unto Jesus to kiss him.

⁴⁸But Jesus said unto him, **Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss?**

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 18:

³Judas then, having received a band *of men* and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns and torches and weapons.

⁴Jesus therefore, knowing all things that should come upon him, went forth, and said unto them, **Whom seek ye?**

⁵They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, **I am *he*.** And Judas also, which betrayed him, stood with them.

⁶As soon then as he had said unto them, I am *he*, they went backward, and fell to the ground.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

⁵⁰...Then came they, and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.

⁵¹And, behold, one of them which were with Jesus stretched out *his* hand, and drew his sword, and struck a servant of the high priest's, and smote off his ear.

⁵²Then said Jesus unto him, **Put up again thy sword into his place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword.**

⁵³**Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels?**

⁵⁴**But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?**

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

⁴⁶And they laid their hands on him, and took him.

⁴⁷And one of them that stood by drew a sword, and smote a servant of the high priest, and cut off his ear.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

⁴⁹When they which were about him saw what would follow, they said unto him, Lord, shall we smite with the sword?

⁵⁰And one of them smote the servant of the high priest, and cut off his right ear.

⁵¹And Jesus answered and said, **Suffer ye thus far.** And he touched his ear, and healed him.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 18:

⁷Then asked he them again, **Whom seek ye?** And they said, Jesus of Nazareth.

⁸Jesus answered, **I have told you that I am *he*: if therefore ye seek me, let these go their way:**

⁹That the saying might be fulfilled, which he spake, Of them which thou gavest me have I lost none.

¹⁰Then Simon Peter having a sword drew it, and smote the high priest's servant, and cut off his right ear. The servant's name was Malchus.

¹¹Then said Jesus unto Peter, **Put up thy sword into the sheath: the cup which my Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?**

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

⁵⁵In that same hour said Jesus to the multitudes, *Are ye come out as against a thief with swords and staves for to take me?*

...I sat daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye laid no hold on me.

⁵⁶But all this was done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled.

...Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled.

⁵⁷And they that had laid hold on Jesus led *him* away

...to Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were assembled.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

⁴⁸And Jesus answered and said unto them, *Are ye come out, as against a thief, with swords and with staves to take me?*

⁴⁹*I was daily with you in the temple teaching, and ye took me not: but the scriptures must be fulfilled.*

⁵⁰And they all forsook him, and fled.

⁵¹And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth cast about *his* naked *body*; and the young men laid hold on him:

⁵²And he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked.

⁵³And they led Jesus away

...to the high priest: and with him were assembled all the chief priests and the elders and the scribes.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

⁵²Then Jesus said unto the chief priests, and captains of the temple, and the elders, which were come to him, *Be ye come out, as against a thief, with swords and staves?*

⁵³*When I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched forth no hands against me: but this is your hour, and the power of darkness.*

⁵⁴Then took they him, and led *him*,

...and brought him into the high priest's house.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 18:

¹²Then the band and the captain and officers of the Jews took Jesus, and bound him,

¹³And led him away to Annas first; for he was father in law to Caiaphas, which was the high priest that same year.

¹⁴Now Caiaphas was he, which gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

⁵⁸But Peter followed him afar off unto the high priest's palace, and went in, and sat with the servants, to see the end.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

⁵⁴And Peter followed him afar off, even into the palace of the high priest: and he sat with the servants, and warmed himself at the fire.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

⁵⁵And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall, and were set down together, Peter sat down among them.

⁵⁶But a certain maid beheld him as he sat by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him, and said, This man was also with him.

⁵⁷And he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 18:

¹⁵And Simon Peter followed Jesus, and so *did* another disciple: that disciple was known unto the high priest, and went in with Jesus into the palace of the high priest.

¹⁶But Peter stood at the door without. Then went out that other disciple, which was known unto the high priest, and spake unto her that kept the door, and brought in Peter.

¹⁷Then saith the damsel that kept the door unto Peter, Art not thou also *one* of this man's disciples?

He saith, I am not.

¹⁸And the servants and officers stood there, who had made a fire of coals; for it was cold: and they warmed themselves: and Peter stood with them, and warmed himself.

¹⁹The high priest then asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.

²⁰Jesus answered him, **I spake openly to the world; I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither the Jews always resort; and in secret have I said nothing.**

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 18:

²¹Why askest thou me? ask them which heard me, what I have said unto them: behold, they know what I said.

²²And when he had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by struck Jesus with the palm of his hand, saying, Answerest thou the high priest so?

²³Jesus answered him, *If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil: but if well, why smitest thou me?*

²⁴Now Annas had sent him bound unto Caiaphas the high priest.

²⁵And Simon Peter stood and warmed himself. They said therefore unto him, Art not thou also *one* of his disciples? He denied *it*, and said, I am not.

²⁶One of the servants of the high priest, being *his* kinsman whose ear Peter cut off, saith, Did not I see thee in the garden with him?

²⁷Peter then denied again:

...and immediately

...the cock crew.

⁵⁸And after a little while another saw him, and said, Thou art also of them.

...And Peter said, Man, I am not.

⁵⁹And about the space of one hour after another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a truth this *fellow* also was with him: for he is a Galilaeen.

⁶⁰And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediately, while he yet spake, the cock crew.

⁶¹And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter. And Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, *Before the cock crew, thou shalt deny me thrice.*

⁶²And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

⁵⁹Now the chief priests, and elders, and all the council, sought false witness against Jesus, to put him to death;
⁶⁰But found none: yea, though many false witnesses came, *yet* found they none...
...At the last came two false witnesses,
⁶¹And said, This *fellow* said, I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days.

⁶²And the high priest arose, and said unto him,
...Answerest thou nothing? what *is it which* these witness against thee?

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

⁵⁵And the chief priests and all the council sought for witness against Jesus to put him to death; and found none.
⁵⁶For many bare false witness against him, but their witness agreed not together.
⁵⁷And there arose certain, and bare false witness against him, saying,
⁵⁸We heard him say, I will destroy this temple that is made with hands, and within three days I will build another made without hands.
⁵⁹But neither so did their witness agree together.
⁶⁰And the high priest stood up in the midst, and asked Jesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing? what *is it which* these witness against thee?

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

⁶³And the men that held Jesus mocked him, and smote *him*.
⁶⁴And when they had blindfolded him, they struck him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophecy, who is it that smote thee?
⁶⁵And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.
⁶⁶And as soon as it was day, the elders of the people and the chief priests and the scribes came together, and led him into their council,

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 18:

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

⁶³But Jesus held his peace. And the high priest answered and said unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God.

⁶⁴Jesus saith unto him, **Thou hast said:**

...nevertheless I say unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.

⁶⁵Then the high priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy; what further need have we of witnesses? behold, now ye have heard his blasphemy.

⁶⁶What think ye? They answered and said, He is guilty of death.

⁶⁷Then did they spit in his face, and buffeted him; and others smote *him* with the palms of their hands,

⁶⁸Saying, Prophesy unto us, thou Christ, Who is he that smote thee?

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

⁶¹But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Again the high priest asked him, and said unto him, Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed?

⁶²And Jesus said, **I am:**

...and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.

⁶³Then the high priest rent his clothes, and saith, What need we any further witnesses?

⁶⁴Ye have heard the blasphemy: what think ye? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death.

⁶⁵And some began to spit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffet him, and to say unto him, Prophesy: and the servants did strike him with the palms of their hands.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

⁶⁶... saying,
⁶⁷Art thou the Christ? tell us.

...And he said unto them, **If I tell you, ye will not believe:**

⁶⁸And if I also ask *you*, ye will not answer me, nor let *me* go.

⁶⁹Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.

⁷⁰Then said they all, Art thou then the Son of God? And he said unto them, **Ye say that I am.**

⁷¹And they said, What need we any further witness? for we ourselves have heard of his own mouth.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 18:

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 26:

⁶⁹Now Peter sat without in the palace:

...and a damsel came unto him,
saying,

...Thou also wast with Jesus of
Galilee.

⁷⁰But he denied before *them* all,
saying, I know not what thou sayest.

⁷¹And when he was gone out into the
porch, another *maid* saw him, and
said unto them that were there, This
fellow was also with Jesus of
Nazareth.

⁷²And again he denied with an oath, I
do not know the man.

⁷³And after a while came unto *him*
they that stood by, and said to Peter,
Surely thou also art *one* of them; for
thy speech betrayeth thee.

⁷⁴Then began he to curse and to
swear, *saying*, I know not the man.

...And immediately the cock crew.

⁷⁵And Peter remembered the word of
Jesus, which said unto him, **Before
the cock crow, thou shalt deny me
thrice.** And he went out, and wept
bitterly.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 14:

⁶⁶And as Peter was beneath in the
palace, there cometh one of the
maids of the high priest:

⁶⁷And when she saw Peter
warming himself, she looked upon
him, and said, And thou also wast
with Jesus of Nazareth.

⁶⁸But he denied, saying, I know not,
neither understand I what thou
sayest. And he went out into the
porch; and the cock crew.

⁶⁹And a maid saw him again, and
began to say to them that stood by,
This is *one* of them.

⁷⁰And he denied it again. And a
little after, they that stood by said
again to Peter,

...Surely thou art *one* of them: for
thou art a Galilaean, and thy
speech agreeth *thereto*.

⁷¹But he began to curse and to
swear, *saying*, I know not this man
of whom ye speak.

⁷²And the second time the cock
crew. And Peter called to mind the
word that Jesus said unto him,
**Before the cock crow twice, thou
shalt deny me thrice.** And when he
thought thereon, he wept.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 22:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 18:

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

¹When the morning was come, all the chief priests and elders of the people took counsel against Jesus to put him to death:

²And when they had bound him, they led *him* away,
...and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor.

³Then Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders,

⁴Saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, *What is that* to us? see thou *to that*.

⁵And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself.

⁶And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and said, It is not lawful for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood.

⁷And they took counsel, and bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in.

⁸Wherefore that field was called, The field of blood, unto this day.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 15:

¹And straightway in the morning the chief priests held a consultation with the elders and scribes and the whole council, and bound Jesus, and carried *him* away,

...and delivered *him* to Pilate.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

¹And the whole multitude of them arose,

...and led him unto Pilate.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 18:

²⁸Then led they Jesus from Caiaphas unto the hall of judgment: and it was early; and they themselves went not into the judgment hall, lest they should be defiled; but that they might eat the passover.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

⁹Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the children of Israel did value;
¹⁰And gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me.

¹¹And Jesus stood before the governor: and the governor asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews? And Jesus said unto him, **Thou sayest.**

2ND WITNESS

MARK 15:

²And Pilate asked him, Art thou the King of the Jews? And he answering said unto him, **Thou sayest it.**

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

²And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this *fellow* perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Caesar, saying that he himself is Christ a King.

³And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews? And he answered him and said, **Thou sayest it.**

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 18:

²⁹Pilate then went out unto them, and said, What accusation bring ye against this man?

³⁰They answered and said unto him, If he were not a malefactor, we would not have delivered him up unto thee.

³¹Then said Pilate unto them, Take ye him, and judge him according to your law. The Jews therefore said unto him, It is not lawful for us to put any man to death:

³²That the saying of Jesus might be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying what death he should die.

³³Then Pilate entered into the judgment hall again, and called Jesus, and said unto him, Art thou the King of the Jews?

³⁴Jesus answered him, **Sayest thou this thing of thyself, or did others tell it thee of me?**

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 15:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 18:

³⁵Pilate answered, Am I a Jew?
Thine own nation and the chief
priests have delivered thee unto
me: what hast thou done?

³⁶Jesus answered, **My kingdom is
not of this world: if my kingdom
were of this world, then would my
servants fight, that I should not be
delivered to the Jews: but now is
my kingdom not from hence.**

³⁷Pilate therefore said unto him,
Art thou a king then? Jesus
answered, **Thou sayest that I am
a king. To this end was I born,
and for this cause came I into the
world, that I should bear witness
unto the truth. Every one that is of
the truth heareth my voice.**

³⁸Pilate saith unto him, What is
truth? And when he had said this,
he went out again unto the Jews,
and saith unto them, I find in him
no fault *at all*.

³⁹But ye have a custom, that I
should release unto you one at
the passover: will ye therefore that
I release unto you the King of the
Jews?

⁴⁰Then cried they all again,
saying, Not this man, but
Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a
robber.

⁴Then said Pilate to the chief priests
and to the people, I find no fault in
this man.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

¹²And when he was accused of the chief priests and elders, he answered nothing.

¹³Then said Pilate unto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witness against thee?

¹⁴And he answered him to never a word; insomuch that the governor marvelled greatly.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 15:

³And the chief priests accused him of many things: but he answered nothing.

⁴And Pilate asked him again, saying, Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they witness against thee.

⁵But Jesus yet answered nothing; so that Pilate marvelled.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

⁵And they were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jewry, beginning from Galilee to this place.

⁶When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilaean.

⁷And as soon as he knew that he belonged unto Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself also was at Jerusalem at that time.

⁸And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad: for he was desirous to see him of a long *season*, because he had heard many things of him; and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him.

⁹Then he questioned with him in many words; but he answered him nothing.

¹⁰And the chief priests and scribes stood and vehemently accused him.

¹¹And Herod with his men of war set him at nought, and mocked *him*, and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate.

¹²And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together: for before they were at enmity between themselves.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 19:

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

¹⁵Now at *that* feast the governor was wont to release unto the people a prisoner, whom they would.
¹⁶And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 15:

⁶Now at *that* feast he released unto them one prisoner, whomsoever they desired.
⁷And there was *one* named Barabbas, *which lay* bound with them that had made insurrection with him, who had committed murder in the insurrection.
⁸And the multitude crying aloud began to desire *him to do* as he had ever done unto them.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

¹³And Pilate, when he had called together the chief priests and the rulers and the people,
¹⁴Said unto them, Ye have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people: and, behold, I, having examined *him* before you, have found no fault in this man touching those things whereof ye accuse him:
¹⁵No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him; and, lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto him.
¹⁶I will therefore chastise him, and release *him*.
¹⁷(For of necessity he must release one unto them at the feast.)

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 19:

¹Then Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged *him*.
²And the soldiers platted a crown of thorns, and put *it* on his head, and they put on him a purple robe,
³And said, Hail, King of the Jews! and they smote him with their hands.
⁴Pilate therefore went forth again, and saith unto them,

...Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know that ...I find no fault in him.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

¹⁷Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus which is called Christ?

2ND WITNESS

MARK 15:

⁹But Pilate answered them, saying, Will ye that I release unto you the King of the Jews?

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 19:

⁵Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe. And *Pilate* saith unto them, Behold the man!

⁶When the chief priests therefore and officers saw him, they cried out, saying, Crucify *him*, crucify *him*. Pilate saith unto them, Take ye him, and crucify *him*: for I find no fault in him.

⁷The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by our law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God.

⁸When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he was the more afraid; ⁹And went again into the judgment hall, and saith unto Jesus, Whence art thou? But Jesus gave him no answer.

¹⁰Then saith Pilate unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have power to crucify thee, and have power to release thee?

¹¹Jesus answered, **Thou couldst have no power *at all* against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath the greater sin.**

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

¹⁸For he knew that for envy they had delivered him.

¹⁹When he was set down on the judgment seat,

...his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that just man: for I have suffered many things this day in a dream because of him.

²⁰But the chief priests and elders persuaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus.

²¹The governor answered and said unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you? They said, Barabbas.

²²Pilate saith unto them, What shall I do then with Jesus which is called Christ?

...*They* all say unto him, Let him be crucified.

²³And the governor said, Why, what evil hath he done?

2ND WITNESS

MARK 15:

¹⁰For he knew that the chief priests had delivered him for envy.

¹¹But the chief priests moved the people, that he should rather release Barabbas unto them.

¹²And Pilate answered and said again unto them, What will ye then that I shall do *unto him* whom ye call the King of the Jews?

¹³And they cried out again, Crucify him.

¹⁴Then Pilate said unto them, Why, what evil hath he done?

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

¹⁸And they cried out all at once, saying, Away with this *man*, and release unto us Barabbas:
¹⁹(Who for a certain sedition made in the city, and for murder, was cast into prison.)

²⁰Pilate therefore, willing to release Jesus, spake again to them.

²¹But they cried, saying, Crucify *him*, crucify him.

²²And he said unto them the third time, Why, what evil hath he done? I have found no cause of death in him: I will therefore chastise him, and let *him* go.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 19:

¹²And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release him: but the Jews cried out, saying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Caesar's friend: whosoever maketh himself a king speaketh against Caesar.

¹³When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down in the judgment seat in a place that is called the Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

²³...But they cried out the more, saying, Let him be crucified.

²⁴When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but *that* rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed *his* hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person: see ye *to it*.
²⁵Then answered all the people, and said, His blood *be* on us, and on our children.

²⁶Then released he Barabbas unto them:

...and when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered *him* to be crucified.
²⁷Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band of *soldiers*.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 15:

¹⁴...And they cried out the more exceedingly, Crucify him.

¹⁵And so Pilate, willing to content the people,
...released Barabbas unto them,

...and delivered Jesus, when he had scourged *him*, to be crucified.
¹⁶And the soldiers led him away into the hall, called Praetorium; and they call together the whole band.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

²³And they were instant with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified. And the voices of them and of the chief priests prevailed.

²⁴And Pilate gave sentence that it should be as they required.
²⁵And he released unto them him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired;
...but he delivered Jesus to their will.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 19:

¹⁴And it was the preparation of the passover, and about the sixth hour: and he saith unto the Jews, Behold your King!
¹⁵But they cried out, Away with *him*, away with *him*, crucify him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucify your King? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Caesar.

¹⁶Then delivered he him therefore unto them to be crucified. And they took Jesus, and led *him* away.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

²⁸And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe.

²⁹And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put *it* upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying,

...Hail, King of the Jews!

³⁰And they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head.

³¹And after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him, and led him away to crucify *him*.

³²And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to bear his cross.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 15:

¹⁷And they clothed him with purple,

...and platted a crown of thorns, and put it about his *head*,

¹⁸And began to salute him,

...Hail, King of the Jews!

¹⁹And they smote him on the head with a reed, and did spit upon him, and bowing *their* knees worshipped him.

²⁰And when they had mocked him, they took off the purple from him, and put his own clothes on him, and led him out to crucify him.

²¹And they compel one Simon a Cyrenian, who passed by, coming out of the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his cross.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

²⁶And as they led him away, they laid hold upon one Simon, a Cyrenian, coming out of the country, and on him they laid the cross, that he might bear *it* after Jesus.

²⁷And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him.

²⁸But Jesus turning unto them said, **Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children.**

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 19:

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

³³And when they were come unto a place called Golgotha, that is to say, a place of a skull,
³⁴They gave him vinegar to drink mingled with gall: and when he had tasted *thereof*, he would not drink.
³⁵And they crucified him,

2ND WITNESS

MARK 15:

²²And they bring him unto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, The place of a skull.
²³And they gave him to drink wine mingled with myrrh: but he received *it* not.
²⁴And when they had crucified him,

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

²⁹For, behold, the days are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck.
³⁰Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us.
³¹For if they do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the dry?
³²And there were also two other, malefactors, led with him to be put to death.
³³And when they were come to the place, which is called Calvary,
...there they crucified him, and the malefactors, one on the right hand, and the other on the left.
³⁴Then said Jesus, **Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do.**

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 19:

¹⁷And he bearing his cross went forth into a place called *the place* of a skull, which is called in the Hebrew Golgotha:
¹⁸Where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

³⁵...and parted his garments, casting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, They parted my garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast lots.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 15:

²⁴...they parted his garments, casting lots upon them, what every man should take.

²⁵And it was the third hour, and they crucified him.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

³⁴...And they parted his raiment, and cast lots.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 19:

¹⁹And Pilate wrote a title, and put *it* on the cross. And the writing was, JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE JEWS.

²⁰This title then read many of the Jews: for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city: and it was written in Hebrew, *and* Greek, *and* Latin.

²¹Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews; but that he said, I am King of the Jews.

²²Pilate answered, What I have written I have written.

²³Then the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, and made four parts, to every soldier a part; and also *his* coat: now the coat was without seam, woven from the top throughout.

²⁴They said therefore among themselves, Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be: that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, They parted my raiment among them, and for my vesture they did cast lots. These things therefore the soldiers did.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

³⁶And sitting down they watched him there;

³⁷And set up over his head his accusation written,
...THIS IS JESUS
...THE KING OF THE JEWS.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 15:

²⁶And the superscription of his accusation was written over,
...THE KING OF THE JEWS.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

³⁵And the people stood beholding.

...And the rulers also with them derided *him*, saying, He saved others; let him save himself, if he be Christ, the chosen of God.

³⁶And the soldiers also mocked him, coming to him, and offering him vinegar,

³⁷And saying, If thou be the king of the Jews, save thyself.

³⁸And a superscription also was written over him in letters of Greek, and Latin, and Hebrew, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 19:

²⁵Now there stood by the cross of Jesus his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary the *wife* of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene.

²⁶When Jesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loved, he saith unto his mother, **Woman, behold thy son!**

²⁷Then saith he to the disciple, **Behold thy mother!** And from that hour that disciple took her unto his own *home*.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

³⁸Then were there two thieves crucified with him, one on the right hand, and another on the left.

³⁹And they that passed by reviled him, wagging their heads,
⁴⁰And saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest *it* in three days,
...save thyself. If thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 15:

²⁷And with him they crucify two thieves; the one on his right hand, and the other on his left.
²⁸And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was numbered with the transgressors.

²⁹And they that passed by railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Ah, thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest *it* in three days,
³⁰Save thyself, and come down from the cross.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

³⁹And one of the malefactors which were hanged railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us.
⁴⁰But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?
⁴¹And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss.
⁴²And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom.
⁴³And Jesus said unto him, **Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.**

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 19:

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

⁴¹Likewise also the chief priests mocking *him*, with the scribes and elders, said,

⁴²He saved others; himself he cannot save.

...If he be the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe him.

⁴³He trusted in God; let him deliver him now, if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God.

⁴⁴The thieves also, which were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth.

⁴⁵Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land unto the ninth hour.

⁴⁶And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, **Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani?**

...that is to say, **My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?**

⁴⁷Some of them that stood there, when they heard *that*, said, This *man* calleth for Elias.

⁴⁸And straightway one of them ran, and took a sponge, and filled *it* with vinegar, and put *it* on a reed, and gave him to drink.

⁴⁹The rest said, Let be, let us see whether Elias will come to save him.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 15:

³¹Likewise also the chief priests mocking said among themselves with the scribes,

...He saved others; himself he cannot save.

³²Let Christ the King of Israel descend now from the cross, that we may see and believe.

And they that were crucified with him reviled him.

³³And when the sixth hour was come, there was darkness over the whole land until the ninth hour.

³⁴And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, **Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?** which is, being interpreted, **My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?**

³⁵And some of them that stood by, when they heard *it*, said, Behold, he calleth Elias.

³⁶And one ran and filled a sponge full of vinegar, and put *it* on a reed, and gave him to drink,

...saying, Let alone; let us see whether Elias will come to take him down.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

⁴⁴And it was about the sixth hour, and there was a darkness over all the earth until the ninth hour.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 19:

²⁸After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, **I thirst.**

²⁹Now there was set a vessel full of vinegar: and they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put *it* upon hyssop, and put *it* to his mouth.

³⁰When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar,

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

⁵⁰Jesus, when he had cried again with a loud voice,

...yielded up the ghost.

⁵¹And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent;

⁵²And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose,

⁵³And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.

⁵⁴Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God.

⁵⁵And many women were there beholding afar off, which followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him:

⁵⁶Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of Zebedee's children.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 15:

³⁷And Jesus cried with a loud voice,

...and gave up the ghost.

³⁸And the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom.

³⁹And when the centurion, which stood over against him, saw that he so cried out, and gave up the ghost, he said,
...Truly this man was the Son of God.

⁴⁰There were also women looking on afar off: among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the less and of Joses, and Salome; ⁴¹(Who also, when he was in Galilee, followed him, and ministered unto him;) and many other women which came up with him unto Jerusalem.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

⁴⁵And the sun was darkened, and the veil of the temple was rent in the midst.

⁴⁶And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, **Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit:** and having said thus,
...he gave up the ghost.

⁴⁷Now when the centurion saw what was done,

...he glorified God, saying,
Certainly this was a righteous man.

⁴⁸And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breasts, and returned.

⁴⁹And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood afar off, beholding these things.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 19:

³⁰...he said, **It is finished:**
...and he bowed his head,
...and gave up the ghost.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 15:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 19:

³¹The Jews therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the sabbath day, (for that sabbath day was an high day,) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and *that* they might be taken away.

³²Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him.

³³But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs:

³⁴But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.

³⁵And he that saw *it* bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe.

³⁶For these things were done, that the scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken.

³⁷And again another scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

⁵⁷When the even was come,

...there came a rich man of Arimathaea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus' disciple:

⁵⁸He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus.

...Then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered.

⁵⁹And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth,

2ND WITNESS

MARK 15:

⁴²And now when the even was come, because it was the preparation, that is, the day before the sabbath,

⁴³Joseph of Arimathaea, an honourable counsellor, which also waited for the kingdom of God, came,

...and went in boldly unto Pilate, and craved the body of Jesus.

⁴⁴And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead: and calling *unto him* the centurion, he asked him whether he had been any while dead.

⁴⁵And when he knew *it* of the centurion, he gave the body to Joseph.

⁴⁶And he bought fine linen, and took him down, and wrapped him in the linen,

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

⁵⁰And, behold, *there was* a man named Joseph, a counsellor; *and he was* a good man, and a just:

⁵¹(The same had not consented to the counsel and deed of them;) *he was* of Arimathaea, a city of the Jews: who also himself waited for the kingdom of God.

⁵²This *man* went unto Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus.

⁵³And he took it down, and wrapped it in linen,

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 19:

³⁸And after this Joseph of Arimathaea, being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews,

...besought Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus:

...and Pilate gave *him* leave. He came therefore, and took the body of Jesus.

³⁹And there came also Nicodemus, which at the first came to Jesus by night, and brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about an hundred pound *weight*.

⁴⁰Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 27:

⁶⁰And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed.

⁶¹And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sepulchre.

⁶²Now the next day, that followed the day of the preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate,

⁶³Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again.

⁶⁴Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first.

⁶⁵Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch: go your way, make *it* as sure as ye can.

⁶⁶So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 15:

⁴⁶...and laid him in a sepulchre which was hewn out of a rock, and rolled a stone unto the door of the sepulchre.

⁴⁷And Mary Magdalene and Mary *the mother* of Joses beheld where he was laid.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 23:

⁵³...and laid it in a sepulchre that was hewn in stone, wherein never man before was laid.

⁵⁴And that day was the preparation, and the sabbath drew on.

⁵⁵And the women also, which came with him from Galilee, followed after, and beheld the sepulchre, and how his body was laid.

⁵⁶And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments; and rested the sabbath day according to the commandment.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 19:

⁴¹Now in the place where he was crucified there was a garden; and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid.
⁴²There laid they Jesus therefore

...because of the Jews' preparation *day*;
...for the sepulchre was nigh at hand.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 28:

¹In the end of the sabbath, as it began to dawn toward the first *day* of the week,
...came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to see the sepulchre.

²And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it.

³His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow:
⁴And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead *men*.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 16:

¹And when the sabbath was past,
...Mary Magdalene, and Mary the *mother* of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him.
²And very early in the morning the first *day* of the week, they came unto the sepulchre at the rising of the sun.
³And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre?

⁴And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away: for it was very great.
⁵And entering into the sepulchre,

...they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment; and they were affrighted.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 24:

¹Now upon the first *day* of the week, very early in the morning,
...they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain *others* with them.

²And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre.

³And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus.
⁴And it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 20:

¹The first *day* of the week
...cometh Mary Magdalene early,

...when it was yet dark, unto the sepulchre,

...and seeth the stone taken away from the sepulchre.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 28:

⁵And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified.

⁶He is not here: for he is risen, as he said. Come, see the place where the Lord lay.

⁷And go quickly, and tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead; and, behold, he goeth before you into Galilee; there shall ye see him: lo, I have told you.

⁸And they departed quickly from the sepulchre with fear and great joy; and did run to bring his disciples word.

⁹And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, **All hail.** And they came and held him by the feet, and worshipped him.

¹⁰Then said Jesus unto them, **Be not afraid: go tell my brethren that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me.**

2ND WITNESS

MARK 16:

⁶And he saith unto them, Be not affrighted: Ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, which was crucified:

...he is risen; he is not here: behold the place where they laid him.

⁷But go your way, tell his disciples and Peter that he goeth before you into Galilee: there shall ye see him, as he said unto you.

⁸And they went out quickly, and fled from the sepulchre; for they trembled and were amazed: neither said they any thing to any *man*; for they were afraid.

⁹Now when *Jesus* was risen early the first *day* of the week,

...he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven devils.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 24:

⁵And as they were afraid, and bowed down *their* faces to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye the living among the dead?

⁶He is not here, but is risen: remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee, ⁷Saying, The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again.

⁸And they remembered his words,

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 20:

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 28:

¹¹Now when they were going,

...behold, some of the watch came into the city, and showed unto the chief priests all the things that were done.

¹²And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers,

¹³Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept.

¹⁴And if this come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and secure you.

¹⁵So they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

2ND WITNESS

MARK 16:

¹⁰And she went and told them that had been with him, as they mourned and wept.

¹¹And they, when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, believed not.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 24:

⁹And returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest.

¹⁰It was Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary *the mother* of James, and other *women that were* with them,

...which told these things unto the apostles.

¹¹And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 20:

²Then she runneth, ...and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple, whom Jesus loved,

...and saith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 28:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 16:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 24:

¹²Then arose Peter,

...and ran unto the sepulchre;

...and stooping down, he beheld the linen clothes laid by themselves, and departed, wondering in himself at that which was come to pass.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 20:

³Peter therefore went forth, and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre.

⁴So they ran both together: and the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the sepulchre.

⁵And he stooping down, *and looking in*, saw the linen clothes lying; yet went he not in.

⁶Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen clothes lie,

⁷And the napkin, that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by itself.

⁸Then went in also that other disciple, which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw, and believed.

⁹For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead.

¹⁰Then the disciples went away again unto their own home.

¹¹But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping: and as she wept, she stooped down, *and looked* into the sepulchre,

¹²And seeth two angels in white sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 28:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 16:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 24:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 20:

¹³And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.

¹⁴And when she had thus said, she turned herself back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.

¹⁵Jesus saith unto her, **Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou?** She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou have borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.

¹⁶Jesus saith unto her, **Mary.** She turned herself, and saith unto him, Rabboni; which is to say, Master.

¹⁷Jesus saith unto her, **Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father; and to my God, and your God.**

¹⁸Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that she had seen the Lord, and *that* he had spoken these things unto her.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 28:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 16:

¹²After that he appeared in another form unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the country.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 24:

¹³And, behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem *about* threescore furlongs.

¹⁴And they talked together of all these things which had happened.

¹⁵And it came to pass, that, while they communed *together* and reasoned, Jesus himself drew near, and went with them.

¹⁶But their eyes were holden that they should not know him.

¹⁷And he said unto them, **What manner of communications are these that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and are sad?**

¹⁸And the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering said unto him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to pass there in these days?

¹⁹And he said unto them, **What things?** And they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people:

²⁰And how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 20:

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 28:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 16:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 24:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 20:

²¹But we trusted that it had been he which should have redeemed Israel: and beside all this, to day is the third day since these things were done.
²²Yea, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepulchre;
²³And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive.
²⁴And certain of them which were with us went to the sepulchre, and found *it* even so as the women had said: but him they saw not.
²⁵Then he said unto them, **O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken:**
²⁶**Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?**
²⁷And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself.
²⁸And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further.
²⁹But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 28:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 16:

¹³And they went and told *it* unto the residue: neither believed they them.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 24:

³⁰And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed *it*, and brake, and gave to them.

³¹And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight.

³²And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?

³³And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them,

³⁴Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.

³⁵And they told what things *were done* in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.

³⁶And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, *Peace be unto you.*

³⁷But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 20:

¹⁹Then the same day at evening, being the first *day* of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, *Peace be unto you.*

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 28:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 16:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 24:

³⁸And he said unto them, *Why are ye troubled? and why do thoughts arise in your hearts?*

³⁹Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.

⁴⁰And when he had thus spoken, he showed them *his* hands and *his* feet.

⁴¹And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, *Have ye here any meat?*

⁴²And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an honeycomb.

⁴³And he took *it*, and did eat before them.

⁴⁴And he said unto them, *These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms, concerning me.*

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 20:

²⁰And when he had so said, he showed unto them *his* hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the Lord.

²¹Then said Jesus to them again, *Peace be unto you: as my Father hath sent me, even so send I you.*

²²And when he had said this, he breathed on *them*, and saith unto them, *Receive ye the Holy Ghost:*

²³*Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained.*

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 28:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 16:

¹⁴Afterward he appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat,

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 24:

⁴⁵Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures,
⁴⁶And said unto them, **Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day:**
⁴⁷**And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.**
⁴⁸**And ye are witnesses of these things.**
⁴⁹**And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high.**

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 20:

²⁴But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came.
²⁵The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe.
²⁶And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: *then* came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, **Peace be unto you.**

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 28:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 16:

¹⁴...and upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 24:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 20:

²⁷Then saith he to Thomas, **Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust *it* into my side: and be not faithless, but believing.**

²⁸And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God.

²⁹Jesus saith unto him, **Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.**

³⁰And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book:

³¹But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name.

JOHN 21:

¹After these things Jesus showed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and on this wise showed he *himself*.

²There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the *sons* of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 28:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 16:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 24:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 21:

³Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also go with thee. They went forth, and entered into a ship immediately; and that night they caught nothing.

⁴But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore: but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus.

⁵Then Jesus saith unto them, **Children, have ye any meat?** They answered him, No.

⁶And he said unto them, **Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find.** They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes.

⁷Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved saith unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt *his* fisher's coat *unto him*, (for he was naked,) and did cast himself into the sea.

⁸And the other disciples came in a little ship; (for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits,) dragging the net with fishes.

⁹As soon then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and bread.

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 28:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 16:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 24:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 21:

¹⁰Jesus saith unto them, **Bring of the fish which ye have now caught.**

¹¹Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

¹²Jesus saith unto them, **Come and dine.** And none of the disciples durst ask him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord.

¹³Jesus then cometh, and taketh bread, and giveth them, and fish likewise.

¹⁴This is now the third time that Jesus showed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

¹⁵So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, **Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these?** He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, **Feed my lambs.**

¹⁶He saith to him again the second time, **Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me?** He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, **Feed my sheep.**

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 28:

2ND WITNESS

MARK 16:

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 24:

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 21:

¹⁷He saith unto him the third time, *Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me?* Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, *Lovest thou me?* And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, *Feed my sheep.*

¹⁸*Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdedst thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldst: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldst not.*

¹⁹This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, *Follow me.*

²⁰Then Peter, turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved following; which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee?

²¹Peter seeing him saith to Jesus, Lord, and what *shall* this man *do*?

²²Jesus saith unto him, *If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee? follow thou me.*

MATTHEW – MARK – LUKE – JOHN

1ST WITNESS

MATTHEW 28:

¹⁶Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them.

¹⁷And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

¹⁸And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, **All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.**

¹⁹**Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:**

²⁰**Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, *even* unto the end of the world. Amen.**

2ND WITNESS

MARK 16:

¹⁵And he said unto them, **Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.**

¹⁶**He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.**

¹⁷**And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues;**

¹⁸**They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.**

¹⁹So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.

²⁰And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with *them*, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen.

3RD WITNESS

LUKE 24:

⁵⁰And he led them out as far as to Bethany,

(Note: Bethany was a small town on the eastern slope of the Mount of Olives about two miles from Jerusalem.)

...and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them.

⁵¹And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven.

⁵²And they worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy:

⁵³And were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God. Amen.

4TH WITNESS

JOHN 21:

²³Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: yet Jesus said not unto him, He shall not die; but, **If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee?**

²⁴This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true.

²⁵And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen.

APPENDIX I

CRUCIFIXION & RESURRECTION CHRONOLOGY

This chapter is a subset of the previous chapter. It illustrates the complete New Testament chronology of the crucifixion and resurrection sequence of Jesus Christ, using a core group of verses from the gospels and the book of Acts. It is a quick-reference tool for the student who is primarily interested in studying the sequence of events that happened first, second, third, etc. during the crucifixion and resurrection only.

CRUCIFIXION & RESURRECTION CHRONOLOGY

The selected verses are arranged in chronological order in order to illustrate the crucifixion and resurrection sequence of Jesus Christ.

JOHN 19:

¹⁷And he bearing his cross went forth into a place called *the place* of a skull, which is called in the Hebrew Golgotha:

¹⁸Where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst.

MARK 15:

³³And when the sixth hour was come, there was darkness over the whole land until the ninth hour.

³⁴And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, **Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?** which is, being interpreted, **My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?**

³⁵And some of them that stood by, when they heard *it*, said, Behold, he calleth Elias.

JOHN 19:

²⁸After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, **I thirst.**

²⁹Now there was set a vessel full of vinegar: and they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put *it* upon hyssop, and put *it* to his mouth.

³⁰When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, **It is finished:** and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.

MATTHEW 27:

⁵¹And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent;

⁵⁴Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God.

MATTHEW 27:

⁵⁵And many women were there beholding afar off, which followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him:

⁵⁶Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joses (*she was also the mother of Jesus*), and the mother of Zebedee's children.

JOHN 19:31-37

(*Soldiers pierce the side of Jesus.*)

MARK 15:

⁴²And now when the even was come, because it was the preparation, that is, the day before the sabbath,

⁴³Joseph of Arimathea, an honourable counsellor, which also waited for the kingdom of God, came, and went in boldly unto Pilate, and craved the body of Jesus.

⁴⁴And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead: and calling *unto him* the centurion, he asked him whether he had been any while dead.

⁴⁵And when he knew *it* of the centurion, he gave the body to Joseph.

CRUCIFIXION & RESURRECTION CHRONOLOGY

JOHN 19:

³⁹And there came also Nicodemus, which at the first came to Jesus by night, and brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about an hundred pound *weight*.

⁴⁰Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury.

⁴¹Now in the place where he was crucified there was a garden; and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid.

⁴²There laid they Jesus therefore because of the Jews' preparation *day*; for the sepulchre was nigh at hand.

MATTHEW 27:

⁶⁰And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed.

⁶¹And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sepulchre.

⁶²Now the next day, that followed the day of the preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate,

⁶³Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again.

⁶⁴Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first.

⁶⁵Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch: go your way, make *it* as sure as ye can.

⁶⁶So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

LUKE 24:

¹Now upon the first *day* of the week, very early in the morning...

MARK 16:

¹...Mary Magdalene, and Mary the *mother* of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him.

²And very early in the morning the first *day* of the week, they came unto the sepulchre at the rising of the sun.

³And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre?

MATTHEW 28:

²And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it.

MATTHEW 27:

⁵²And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose,

⁵³And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.

CRUCIFIXION & RESURRECTION CHRONOLOGY

LUKE 24:

³And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus.

⁴And it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments:

⁵And as they were afraid, and bowed down *their* faces to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye the living among the dead?

⁶He is not here, but is risen: remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee,

⁷Saying, The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again.

⁸And they remembered his words,

⁹And returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest.

¹⁰It was Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary *the mother* of James, and other *women that were* with them, which told these things unto the apostles.

¹¹And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.

MATTHEW 28:

¹¹...behold, some of the watch came into the city, and showed unto the chief priests all the things that were done.

¹²And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers,

¹³Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept.

¹⁴And if this come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and secure you.

¹⁵So they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

JOHN 20:

³Peter therefore went forth, and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre.

⁴So they ran both together: and the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the sepulchre.

⁵And he stooping down, *and looking in*, saw the linen clothes lying; yet went he not in.

⁶Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen clothes lie,

⁷And the napkin, that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by itself.

⁸Then went in also that other disciple, which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw, and believed.

⁹For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead.

¹⁰Then the disciples went away again unto their own home.

¹¹But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping: and as she wept, she stooped down, *and looked* into the sepulchre,

¹²And seeth two angels in white sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain.

CRUCIFIXION & RESURRECTION CHRONOLOGY

JOHN 20:

¹³And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.

¹⁴And when she had thus said, she turned herself back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.

¹⁵Jesus saith unto her, **Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou?** She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou have borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.

¹⁶Jesus saith unto her, **Mary.** She turned herself, and saith unto him, Rabboni; which is to say, Master.

¹⁷Jesus saith unto her, **Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father; and to my God, and your God.**

¹⁸Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that she had seen the Lord, and *that* he had spoken these things unto her.

LUKE 24:

¹³And, behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem *about* threescore furlongs.

¹⁴And they talked together of all these things which had happened. ¹⁵And it came to pass, that, while they communed *together* and reasoned, Jesus himself drew near, and went with them.

¹⁶But their eyes were holden that they should not know him.

¹⁷And he said unto them, **What manner of communications are these that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and are sad?**

¹⁸And the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering said unto him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to pass there in these days?

¹⁹And he said unto them, **What things?** And they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people:

²⁰And how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him.

²¹But we trusted that it had been he which should have redeemed Israel: and beside all this, to day is the third day since these things were done.

²²Yea, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepulchre;

²³And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive.

²⁴And certain of them which were with us went to the sepulchre, and found *it* even so as the women had said: but him they saw not.

²⁵Then he said unto them, **O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken:**

²⁶**Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?**

²⁷And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself.

²⁸And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further.

²⁹But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them.

CRUCIFIXION & RESURRECTION CHRONOLOGY

LUKE 24:

³⁰And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed *it*, and brake, and gave to them.

³¹And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight.

³²And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?

³³And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them,

³⁴Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.

³⁵And they told what things *were done* in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.

JOHN 20:

¹⁹Then the same day at evening, being the first *day* of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, **Peace be unto you.**

LUKE 24:

³⁷But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit.

³⁸And he said unto them, **Why are ye troubled? and why do thoughts arise in your hearts?**

³⁹**Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.**

JOHN 20:

²⁰And when he had so said, he showed unto them *his* hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the Lord.

²¹Then said Jesus to them again, **Peace be unto you: as *my* Father hath sent me, even so send I you.**

²²And when he had said this, he breathed on *them*, and saith unto them, **Receive ye the Holy Ghost:**

²³**Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose soever *sins* ye retain, they are retained.**

LUKE 24:

⁴¹And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, **Have ye here any meat?**

⁴²And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an honeycomb.

⁴³And he took *it*, and did eat before them.

⁴⁴And he said unto them, **These *are* the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and *in* the prophets, and *in* the psalms, concerning me.**

⁴⁵Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures,

⁴⁶And said unto them, **Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day:**

⁴⁷**And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.**

⁴⁸**And ye are witnesses of these things.**

CRUCIFIXION & RESURRECTION CHRONOLOGY

LUKE 24:

⁴⁹And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high.

JOHN 20:24-31

(Disciple Thomas doubts and then believes.)

JOHN 21:

¹After these things Jesus showed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and on this wise showed he *himself*.

²There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the *sons* of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples.

³Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also go with thee. They went forth, and entered into a ship immediately; and that night they caught nothing.

⁴But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore: but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus.

⁵Then Jesus saith unto them, **Children, have ye any meat?** They answered him, No.

⁶And he said unto them, **Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find.** They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes.

JOHN 21:7-20

(Jesus to Peter: feed my sheep.)

JOHN 21:

²¹Peter seeing him saith to Jesus, Lord, and what *shall* this man *do*?

²²Jesus saith unto him, **If I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee? follow thou me.**

²³Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: yet Jesus said not unto him, He shall not die; but, **If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee?**

LUKE 24:

^{50a}And he led them out as far as to Bethany,

(Note: Bethany was a small town on the eastern slope of the Mount of Olives about two miles from Jerusalem.)

MATTHEW 28:

¹⁶Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them.

¹⁷And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

¹⁸And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, **All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.**

¹⁹**Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:**

²⁰**Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.**

CRUCIFIXION & RESURRECTION CHRONOLOGY

ACTS 1:

³To whom also he showed himself alive after his passion by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God:

⁸But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.

LUKE 24:

^{50b}...and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them.

⁵¹And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven.

ACTS 1:

⁹And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up; and a cloud received him out of their sight.

LUKE 24:

⁵²And they worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy:

⁵³And were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God. Amen.